

*Dedicated to the 100th birthday anniversary
of Professor Levan Magnaradze*



22.06.1913 – 6.02.2002

Memoirs on Differential Equations and Mathematical Physics
VOLUME 59, 2013, 1–104

Robert Hakl, Alexander Lomtadze, and Ioannis P. Stavroulakis

**BOUNDED SOLUTIONS TO THE FIRST ORDER
SCALAR FUNCTIONAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS**

Dedicated to the blessed memory of Professor Levan Magnaradze

Abstract. The question on the existence, uniqueness, and sign properties of a bounded on $[a, +\infty[$ solution to the boundary value problem for the first order functional differential equation is studied. The work is divided into two parts: in the first one, the linear problem is studied, the second one is devoted to the nonlinear problem.

2010 Mathematics Subject Classification. 34K10, 34K12, 34K06, 34K38.

Key words and phrases. Bounded solution, boundary value problem, functional-differential equation, solvability, uniqueness.

რეზიუმე. ნაშრომში შესწავლილია $[a, +\infty[$ ნახევარღერძზე მოცემული პირველი რიგის სკალარული ფუნქციონალურ დიფერენციალური განტოლებების შემოსაზღვრული ამონახსნის არსებობის, ერთადერთობის და ნიშან-მუდმივობის საკითხი. განხილულია როგორც წრფივი, ასევე არაწრფივი განტოლებები.

Introduction

In the present work, the problem on the existence, uniqueness, and sign properties of a bounded on $[a, +\infty[$ solution to the functional differential equation

$$u'(t) = F(u)(t) \quad (0.1)$$

is studied.

In Chapter 1 (Sections 1–5) we consider a linear equation, i.e., the equation

$$u'(t) = \ell(u)(t) + q(t), \quad (0.2)$$

with a “boundary” condition

$$\omega(u) = c.$$

Here $\ell : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ is a linear continuous operator, $\omega : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow R$ is a linear bounded functional, $c \in R$, $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, and

$$\sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t q(s) ds \right| : t \geq a \right\} < +\infty.$$

Main results of this chapter are contained in Section 3. In Subsection 3.1, theorems on “Fredholmity” of above mentioned problem are presented (Theorems 3.1 and 3.2). Optimal (unimprovable) sufficient conditions of existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to (0.2) satisfying one of the conditions

$$\begin{aligned} u(a) &= c, \\ u(+\infty) &= c, \\ u(a) - u(+\infty) &= c \end{aligned}$$

are presented in Subsection 3.2. Sign properties of those solutions are discussed in Subsection 3.3.

In Section 4, the results of Section 3 are concretized for a special case of the equation (0.2), for the equation with deviating arguments

$$u'(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m \left(p_k(t)u(\tau_k(t)) - g_k(t)u(\mu_k(t)) \right) + q(t),$$

where $p_k, g_k \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $\tau_k, \mu_k : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow [a, +\infty[$ are measurable functions.

Chapter 2 is devoted to the nonlinear equation (0.1) with a boundary condition

$$\omega(u) = h(u).$$

Here $h : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow R$ is (in general) a nonlinear functional. In Section 7 we establish so-called principle of existence of a bounded solution, which is our main technical tool to investigate the nonlinear problem. Optimal sufficient conditions for existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to (0.1) are established in Section 8. In Section 10 we concretize results obtained in Section 8 for the equation with deviating arguments of the form

$$u'(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m \left(p_k(t)u(\tau_k(t)) - g_k(t)u(\mu_k(t)) \right) + \\ + f(t, u(t), u(\nu_1(t)), \dots, u(\nu_n(t))),$$

where $p_k, g_k \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, $\tau_k, \mu_k : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow [a, +\infty[$ are measurable functions, and $f : [a, +\infty[\times R^{n+1} \rightarrow R$ is a function satisfying local Carathéodory conditions.

Notation

N is a set of all natural numbers.

R is a set of all real numbers, $R_+ = [0, +\infty[$.

$C([a, b]; R)$ is a Banach space of continuous functions $u : [a, b] \rightarrow R$ with a norm $\|u\|_C = \max\{|u(t)| : a \leq t \leq b\}$.

$C([a, b]; R_+) = \{u \in C([a, b]; R) : u(t) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \in [a, b]\}$.

$C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; \mathcal{D})$, with $\mathcal{D} \subseteq R$, is a set of continuous functions $u : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow \mathcal{D}$ with a topology of uniform convergence on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$.

If $u \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, then

$$\|u\| = \sup \{|u(t)| : t \geq a\}.$$

$C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ is a set of functions $u \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ (with a topology of uniform convergence on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$), for each of which there exists a finite limit

$$u(+\infty) \stackrel{def}{=} \lim_{t \rightarrow +\infty} u(t).$$

$\tilde{C}([a, b]; \mathcal{D})$, where $\mathcal{D} \subseteq R$, is a set of absolutely continuous functions $u : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathcal{D}$.

$\tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; \mathcal{D})$, where $\mathcal{D} \subseteq R$, is a set of functions $u : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow \mathcal{D}$, absolutely continuous on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$.

$\tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; \mathcal{D}) = \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; \mathcal{D}) \cap C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, where $\mathcal{D} \subseteq R$.

$L([a, b]; R)$ is a Banach space of Lebesgue integrable functions $p : [a, b] \rightarrow R$ with a norm

$$\|p\|_L = \int_a^b |p(s)| ds.$$

$L([a, b]; R_+) = \{p \in L([a, b]; R) : p(t) \geq 0 \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, b]\}$.

$L([a, +\infty[; \mathcal{D})$, where $\mathcal{D} \subseteq R$, is a set of Lebesgue integrable functions $p : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow \mathcal{D}$.

$L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; \mathcal{D})$, where $\mathcal{D} \subseteq R$, is a set of locally Lebesgue integrable functions $p : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow \mathcal{D}$ with a topology of convergence in a mean on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$.

\mathcal{C} is a set of nontrivial linear bounded functionals $\omega : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow R$.

\mathcal{W}_0 is a set of nontrivial linear bounded functionals $\omega : C_0([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow R$.

\mathcal{H} is a set of continuous functionals $h : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow R$ with the following property: for every $r > 0$ there exists $M_r \in R_+$ such that

$$|h(v)| \leq M_r \text{ for } \|v\| \leq r.$$

\mathcal{L}_{ab} is a set of linear bounded operators $\ell : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow L([a, b]; R)$, for each of them there exists $\eta \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$|\ell(v)(t)| \leq \eta(t)\|v\|_C \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, b], v \in C([a, b]; R).$$

\mathcal{P}_{ab} is a set of operators $\ell \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ transforming a set $C([a, b]; R_+)$ into a set $L([a, b]; R_+)$.

\mathcal{M}_{ab} is a set of measurable functions $\tau : [a, b] \rightarrow [a, b]$.

\mathcal{K}_{ab} is a set of continuous operators $F : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow L([a, b]; R)$ satisfying Carathéodory conditions, i.e., for every $r > 0$ there exists $q_r \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$|F(v)(t)| \leq q_r(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, b], \|v\|_C \leq r.$$

$\tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ is a set of linear operators $\ell : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ which are continuous, transform a set $C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ into a set $L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, and such that $\ell(1) \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$.

$\tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ is a set of linear operators $\ell : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ which are continuous and for which there exists an operator $\bar{\ell} \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that

$$|\ell(v)(t)| \leq \bar{\ell}(|v|)(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[, v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R).$$

\mathcal{M} is a set of locally measurable functions $\tau : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow [a, +\infty[$.

\mathcal{K} is a set of continuous operators $F : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying local Carathéodory conditions, i.e., for every $r > 0$ there exists $q_r \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ such that

$$|F(v)(t)| \leq q_r(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[, \|v\| \leq r.$$

$K_{loc}([a, +\infty[\times A; B)$, where $A \subseteq R^n$ ($n \in \mathbb{N}$), $B \subseteq R$, is a set of functions $f : [a, +\infty[\times A \rightarrow B$ satisfying local Carathéodory conditions, i.e., for all $x \in A$, the function $f(\cdot, x) : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow B$ is measurable on

every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$, $f(t, \cdot) : A \rightarrow B$ is a continuous function for almost all $t \in [a, +\infty[$, and for every $r > 0$ there exists $q_r \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ such that

$$|f(t, x)| \leq q_r(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[, x \in A, \|x\| \leq r.$$

$K([a, +\infty[\times A; B)$, where $A \subseteq R^n$ ($n \in N$), $B \subseteq R$, is a set of functions $f : [a, +\infty[\times A \rightarrow B$ satisfying Carathéodory conditions, i.e., for all $x \in A$, the function $f(\cdot, x) : [a, +\infty[\rightarrow B$ is measurable on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$, $f(t, \cdot) : A \rightarrow B$ is a continuous function for almost all $t \in [a, +\infty[$, and for every $r > 0$ there exists $q_r \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ such that

$$|f(t, x)| \leq q_r(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[, x \in A, \|x\| \leq r.$$

χ_{ab} is a characteristic function of the interval $[a, b]$, i.e.,

$$\chi_{ab}(t) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t \notin [a, b]. \end{cases}$$

$\theta_b : C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, where $b \in]a, +\infty[$, is an operator defined by

$$\theta_b(u)(t) = \chi_{ab}(t)u(t) + (1 - \chi_{ab}(t))u(b) \text{ for } t \in [a, +\infty[.$$

If $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and $b \in]a, +\infty[$, then

$$\tilde{q}_b(t) = \chi_{ab}(t)q(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[.$$

If $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ and $b \in]a, +\infty[$, then

$$\tilde{\ell}_b(u)(t) = \chi_{ab}(t)\ell(\theta_b(u))(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[.$$

If $F \in \mathcal{K}$ and $b \in]a, +\infty[$, then

$$\tilde{F}_b(u)(t) = \chi_{ab}(t)F(\theta_b(u))(t) \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, +\infty[.$$

If $\omega \in \text{ch}$, resp. $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, and $b \in]a, +\infty[$, then

$$\tilde{\omega}_b(u) = \omega(\theta_b(u)).$$

If $h \in \mathcal{H}$ and $b \in]a, +\infty[$, then

$$\tilde{h}_b(u) = h(\theta_b(u)).$$

We will say that $\ell \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ is a t_0 -Volterra operator, where $t_0 \in [a, b]$, if for arbitrary $a_1 \in [a, t_0]$, $b_1 \in [t_0, b]$, $a_1 \neq b_1$, and $v \in C([a, b]; R)$, satisfying the equality

$$v(t) = 0 \text{ for } t \in [a_1, b_1],$$

we have

$$\ell(v)(t) = 0 \text{ for almost all } t \in [a_1, b_1].$$

We will say that $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ is an a -Volterra operator if for arbitrary $b \in [a, +\infty[$ and $v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, satisfying the equality

$$v(t) = 0 \text{ for } t \in [a, b],$$

we have

$$\ell(v)(t) = 0 \text{ for almost all } t \in [a, b].$$

We will say that $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ is an anti-Volterra operator, if for arbitrary $b \in [a, +\infty[$ and $v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, satisfying the equality

$$v(t) = 0 \text{ for } t \in [b, +\infty[,$$

we have

$$\ell(v)(t) = 0 \text{ for almost all } t \in [b, +\infty[.$$

If $x \in R$, then

$$[x]_+ = \frac{1}{2}(|x| + x), \quad [x]_- = \frac{1}{2}(|x| - x).$$

The uniform convergence in $[a, +\infty[$ is meant as a uniform convergence on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$.

The equalities and inequalities between measurable functions are understood almost everywhere in an appropriate interval.

Linear Problem

1. Statement of the Problem

In this chapter, we will consider the problem on the existence, uniqueness, and nonnegativity of a bounded solution to the equation

$$u'(t) = \ell(u)(t) + q(t) \quad (1.1)$$

satisfying the condition

$$\omega(u) = c. \quad (1.2)$$

Here $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, $\omega \in \text{ch}$, resp. $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, and $c \in R$.

By a solution to (1.1) we understand a function $u \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying the equality (1.1) almost everywhere in $[a, +\infty[$. By a solution to the problem (1.1), (1.2) we understand a solution to (1.1) which belongs to the domain of ω and satisfies (1.2).

Along with the problem (1.1), (1.2) we will consider the corresponding homogeneous problem

$$u'(t) = \ell(u)(t), \quad (1.1_0)$$

$$\omega(u) = 0. \quad (1.2_0)$$

Note that the particular cases of conditions (1.2), resp. (1.2₀), are the following conditions:

$$u(a) = c, \quad (1.3)$$

$$u(+\infty) = c, \quad (1.4)$$

$$u(a) - u(+\infty) = c, \quad (1.5)$$

resp.

$$u(a) = 0, \quad (1.3_0)$$

$$u(+\infty) = 0, \quad (1.4_0)$$

$$u(a) - u(+\infty) = 0. \quad (1.5_0)$$

Let $b > a$ be arbitrary but fixed. Define the operators $\varphi : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ and $\psi : L([a, +\infty[; R) \rightarrow L([a, b]; R)$ by

$$\varphi(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} v(\nu(t)) \text{ for } t \in [a, +\infty[, \quad (1.6)$$

$$\psi(u)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \frac{b-a}{(b-t)^2} u(\nu^{-1}(t)) \text{ for } t \in [a, b[, \quad (1.7)$$

where

$$\nu(t) = b - \frac{b-a}{1+t-a} \quad \text{for } t \in [a, +\infty[, \quad (1.8)$$

and ν^{-1} is the inverse function to ν , i.e.,

$$\nu^{-1}(t) = a + \frac{b-a}{b-t} - 1 \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b[.$$

Introduce the operator $\widehat{\ell} : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow L([a, b]; R)$ by

$$\widehat{\ell}(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \psi(\ell(\varphi(v)))(t) \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b]. \quad (1.9)$$

On account of the assumption $\ell \in \widetilde{\mathcal{L}}$ it is clear that the operator $\widehat{\ell}$ is well defined. Moreover, it can be easily verified that $\widehat{\ell}$ is a linear bounded operator. Analogously, the functional $\widehat{\omega} : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow R$, defined by

$$\widehat{\omega}(v) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \omega(\varphi(v)), \quad (1.10)$$

is a linear bounded functional (in both cases, when $\omega \in \text{ch}$ and $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$).

Now assume that

$$q \in L([a, +\infty[; R), \quad (1.11)$$

$$\widehat{q} \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \psi(q), \quad (1.12)$$

and consider the problem (on the interval $[a, b]$)

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) + \widehat{q}(t), \quad \widehat{\omega}(v) = c \quad (1.13)$$

and the corresponding homogeneous problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t), \quad \widehat{\omega}(v) = 0. \quad (1.13_0)$$

By a direct calculation, it is easy to verify that if v is a solution* to the problem (1.13) then $u \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \varphi(v)$ is a bounded solution to (1.1), (1.2), and vice versa, if u is a bounded solution to the problem (1.1), (1.2), then $v \in \widetilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, and the function v defined by

$$v \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \varphi^{-1}(u), \quad v(b) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} u(+\infty)$$

is a solution to (1.13). Therefore, the following proposition holds:

Proposition 1.1. *Let (1.11) be fulfilled. Then the problem (1.1), (1.2) has a unique bounded solution u if and only if the problem (1.13) has a unique solution v . Moreover, $u \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, $\varphi(v) \equiv u$, and $v(b) = u(+\infty)$.*

A particular case of Proposition 1.1 is the following

Proposition 1.2. *The only bounded solution of the problem (1.1), (1.2) is a trivial solution if and only if the problem (1.13) has only a trivial solution.*

*Solutions are understood in the sense of Carathéodory, i.e., as absolutely continuous functions which satisfy the differential equality almost everywhere in $[a, b]$.

Furthermore, the following assertion is well-known from the general theory of boundary value problems for functional differential equations (see, e.g., [1, 2, 10, 15, 19]).

Proposition 1.3. *The problem (1.13) is uniquely solvable if and only if the corresponding homogeneous problem (1.13₀) has only a trivial solution.*

Consequently, from Propositions 1.1–1.3, it immediately follows

Proposition 1.4. *Let (1.11) be fulfilled. Then the problem (1.1), (1.2) has a unique bounded solution if and only if the only bounded solution of the homogeneous problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution.*

Therefore, the question on the existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to (1.1), (1.2) is equivalent (under the assumption (1.11)) to the question on the unique solvability of the homogeneous boundary value problem (1.13₀) (on a finite interval $[a, b]$).

Remark 1.1. It follows from the Riesz–Schauder theory that if the problem (1.13₀) has a nontrivial solution, then for every $c \in R$ there exists $\hat{q} \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that the problem (1.13) has no solution.

Below we will study the problem (1.1), (1.2) under the less than (1.11) restricted condition, when

$$\sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t q(s) ds \right| : t \geq a \right\} < +\infty \quad (1.14)$$

is fulfilled.

The chapter is organized as follows: Main results are presented in Section 3. First, the analogy of Proposition 1.4 is proved in Subsection 3.1 (see Theorems 3.1 and 3.2). In Subsection 3.2, sufficient conditions for the existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to the equation (1.1) satisfying one of the conditions (1.3), (1.4), or (1.5) are established. The question on sign constant solutions to the problems (1.1), (1. k) ($k = 3, 4, 5$) is discussed in Subsection 3.3. In Section 4 we concretize results of Section 3 for particular cases of the equation (1.1) – for the equations with deviating arguments:

$$u'(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m p_k(t)u(\tau_k(t)) + q(t), \quad (1.15)$$

$$u'(t) = - \sum_{k=1}^m g_k(t)u(\mu_k(t)) + q(t), \quad (1.16)$$

and

$$u'(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m \left(p_k(t)u(\tau_k(t)) - g_k(t)u(\mu_k(t)) \right) + q(t), \quad (1.17)$$

where $p_k, g_k \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, $\tau_k, \mu_k \in \mathcal{M}$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$). Last section of the chapter – Section 5 – is devoted to the examples verifying the optimality of obtained results.

Auxiliary propositions contained in Section 2 play a crucial role in proving the main results. Namely Lemmas 2.1 and 2.2 (see p. 12 and p. 13) state that the unique bounded solution to (1.1), resp. (1.1₀), is a uniform limit of a suitable sequence $\{u_b\}_{b>a}$ of solutions to the problem

$$u'(t) = \tilde{\ell}_b(u)(t) + \tilde{q}_b(t), \quad (1.18)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_b(u) = c, \quad (1.19)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = \tilde{\ell}_b(u)(t), \quad (1.18_0)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_b(u) = 0 \quad (1.19_0)$$

(for the definition of $\tilde{\ell}_b$, $\tilde{\omega}_b$, and \tilde{q}_b see p. 7).

As it was mentioned above, we suppose that $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ and the condition (1.14) is fulfilled. If $\ell(v)(t) \stackrel{def}{=} p(t)v(t)$, i.e., if the equation (1.1) is of the form

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(t) + q(t), \quad (1.20)$$

the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ means that

$$p \in L([a, +\infty[; R). \quad (1.21)$$

The equation (1.20) is a suitable type of the equation (1.1) to verify that both conditions $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ (i.e., (1.21)) and (1.14) are essential for boundedness of its solutions.

2. Auxiliary Propositions

2.1. Lemma on Existence of a Bounded Solution.

Lemma 2.1. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied and let there exist $\rho_0 > 0$ and $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$, such that for every $b \geq b_0$ the equation (1.18) has a solution u_b satisfying the inequality*

$$\|u_b\| \leq \rho_0. \quad (2.1)$$

Then the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution u . Moreover, there exists a sequence $\{u_{b_n}\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \{u_b\}_{b \geq b_0}$ such that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} u_{b_n}(t) = u(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (2.2)$$

Proof. In view of (2.1) and the condition $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, from (1.18) with $u = u_b$ we get

$$|u_b(t) - u_b(s)| \leq \rho_0 \int_s^t \tilde{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi + \int_s^t |q(\xi)| d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t.$$

Hence, the set $\{u_b\}_{b \geq b_0}$ is uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$. Therefore, according to Arzelà–Ascoli lemma, there exist a sequence $\{u_{b_n}\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \{u_b\}_{b \geq b_0}$ and a function $u \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that $\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} b_n = +\infty$ and (2.2) is fulfilled.

Obviously,

$$\theta_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(t) = u_{b_n}(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N,$$

and therefore the integration of (1.18) (with $u = u_{b_n}$) from a to t yields

$$u_{b_n}(t) = u_{b_n}(a) + \int_a^t \ell(u_{b_n})(\xi) d\xi + \int_a^t q(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } t \in [a, b_n], \quad n \in N.$$

Consequently, with respect to (2.2) and the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$,

$$u(t) = u(a) + \int_a^t \ell(u)(\xi) d\xi + \int_a^t q(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } t \geq a,$$

i.e., $u \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and it is a solution to the equation (1.1). Moreover, from (2.1) and (2.2) we have $\|u\| \leq \rho_0$. \square

2.2. Lemmas on A Priori Estimates.

Lemma 2.2. *Let the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) be a trivial solution. Let, moreover, the condition (1.14) be fulfilled. Then there exist $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ and $r_0 > 0$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, the problem (1.18), (1.19) has a unique solution u_b , and this solution admits the estimate*

$$\|u_b\| \leq r_0(|c| + q^*),$$

where

$$q^* = \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t q(s) ds \right| : t \geq a \right\}. \quad (2.3)$$

To prove this lemma we need some auxiliary propositions.

Proposition 2.1. *Let the problem (1.13₀) have only a trivial solution. Then there exists $r_0 > 0$ such that for every $\hat{q} \in L([a, b]; R)$ and $c \in R$, the solution[†] v to the problem (1.13) admits the estimate*

$$\|v\|_C \leq r_0 \left(|c| + \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t \hat{q}(s) ds \right| : t \in [a, b] \right\} \right). \quad (2.4)$$

Proof. Let

$$R \times L([a, b]; R) = \{(c, \hat{q}) : c \in R, \hat{q} \in L([a, b]; R)\}$$

[†]The existence and uniqueness of such a solution is guaranteed by Proposition 1.3.

be a linear space with the norm

$$\|(c, \hat{q})\|_{R \times L} = |c| + \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t \hat{q}(s) ds \right| : t \in [a, b] \right\},$$

and let Ω be an operator, which assigns to every $(c, \hat{q}) \in R \times L([a, b]; R)$ the solution v to the problem (1.13). According to Proposition 1.3, the operator Ω is defined correctly. Moreover, according to Theorem 1.4 in [15], $\Omega : R \times L([a, b]; R) \rightarrow C([a, b]; R)$ is a linear bounded operator (see also [10, Theorem 3.2]). Denote by r_0 the norm of Ω . Then, clearly, for any $(c, \hat{q}) \in R \times L([a, b]; R)$, the inequality

$$\|\Omega(c, \hat{q})\|_C \leq r_0 \|(c, \hat{q})\|_{R \times L}$$

holds. Consequently, the solution $v = \Omega(c, \hat{q})$ to the problem (1.13) admits the estimate (2.4). \square

From Proposition 2.1 it immediately follows

Proposition 2.2. *Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$ be such that the problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution. Then there exists $r_b > 0$ such that for every $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying (1.14) and $c \in R$ the problem (1.18), (1.19) has a unique solution u_b , and this solution admits the estimate*

$$\|u_b\| \leq r_b(|c| + q^*), \quad (2.5)$$

where q^* is defined by (2.3).

Proposition 2.3. *Let the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) be a trivial solution. Then there exists $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, the problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution.*

Proof. Assume on the contrary that there exists an increasing sequence $\{b_k\}_{k=1}^{+\infty}$, $\lim_{k \rightarrow +\infty} b_k = +\infty$, such that, for every $k \in N$, the problem

$$u'(t) = \tilde{\ell}_{b_k}(u)(t), \quad \tilde{\omega}_{b_k}(u) = 0 \quad (2.6)$$

has a nontrivial solution u_k . Obviously,

$$u_k \equiv \theta_{b_k}(u_k) \quad (2.7)$$

and, without loss of generality, we can assume that

$$\|u_k\| = 1 \text{ for } k \in N. \quad (2.8)$$

Furthermore, according to (2.6)–(2.8), and the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} |u_k(t) - u_k(s)| &\leq \int_s^t |u'_k(\xi)| d\xi = \int_s^t |\tilde{\ell}_{b_k}(u_k)(\xi)| d\xi \leq \\ &\leq \int_s^t |\ell(u_k)(\xi)| d\xi \leq \int_s^t \bar{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t, \quad k \in N. \end{aligned}$$

Consequently, the sequence of functions $\{u_k\}_{k=1}^{+\infty}$ is uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$. According to Arzelà–Ascoli lemma we can assume, without loss of generality, that there exists $u_0 \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow +\infty} u_k(t) = u_0(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (2.9)$$

Moreover, on account of (2.8) we have

$$\|u_0\| \leq 1. \quad (2.10)$$

On the other hand, since u_k ($k \in N$) are solutions to (2.6), we obtain

$$u_k(t) = u_k(a) + \int_a^t \tilde{\ell}_{b_k}(u_k)(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad k \in N, \quad (2.11)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_{b_k}(u_k) = 0, \quad k \in N. \quad (2.12)$$

From (2.11), in view of (2.9), we get

$$u_0(t) = u_0(a) + \int_a^t \ell(u_0)(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a. \quad (2.13)$$

Thus $u_0 \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and

$$|u_0(t) - u_0(s)| = \left| \int_s^t \ell(u_0)(\xi) d\xi \right| \leq \|u_0\| \int_s^t \bar{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t.$$

The last inequality (together with (2.10)) and the fact that $\bar{\ell} \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, ensures that there exists a finite limit $u_0(+\infty)$. Consequently, from (2.12), in view of (2.9), we obtain

$$\omega(u_0) = 0. \quad (2.14)$$

Now (2.13) and (2.14) imply that u_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (1.10), (1.20). Therefore,

$$u_0 \equiv 0. \quad (2.15)$$

Since $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, we can choose $b_* \in]a, +\infty[$ such that

$$\int_{b_*}^{+\infty} \bar{\ell}(1)(s) ds \leq \frac{1}{3}. \quad (2.16)$$

According to (2.9) and (2.15) there exists $k_0 \in N$ such that

$$|u_k(t)| \leq \frac{1}{3} \text{ for } t \in [a, b_*], \quad k \geq k_0. \quad (2.17)$$

On the other hand, from (2.11), in view of (2.8), we have

$$|u_k(t) - u_k(b_*)| \leq \int_{b_*}^t |\tilde{\ell}_{b_k}(u_k)(s)| ds \leq \int_{b_*}^{+\infty} \bar{\ell}(1)(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq b_*, \quad k \in N.$$

Hence, on account of (2.16) and (2.17), we obtain

$$|u_k(t)| \leq \frac{2}{3} \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad k \geq k_0,$$

which contradicts (2.8). \square

Proof of Lemma 2.2. Since the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution, then according to Proposition 2.3 there exists $b_* \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_*$ the problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution. Consequently, according to Proposition 2.2 there exists $r_b > 0$ such that the solution u_b to (1.18), (1.19) admits the estimate (2.5).

If $|c| + q^* = 0$ then the conclusion of the lemma is evident. Let, therefore, $|c| + q^* \neq 0$ and assume on the contrary that there exists a sequence $\{b_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty}$ such that $b_n \geq b_*$ for $n \in N$, $\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} b_n = +\infty$, and

$$\|u_{b_n}\| > n(|c| + q^*) \text{ for } n \in N. \quad (2.18)$$

Put

$$v_n(t) = \frac{u_{b_n}(t)}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N. \quad (2.19)$$

Then

$$\|v_n\| = 1 \text{ for } n \in N \quad (2.20)$$

and, in view of (1.18), (1.19), and (2.19), we have

$$v'_n(t) = \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(v_n)(t) + \frac{\tilde{q}_{b_n}(t)}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N, \quad (2.21)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_{b_n}(v_n) = \frac{c}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \text{ for } n \in N. \quad (2.22)$$

Obviously, $\theta_{b_n}(v_n) \equiv v_n$. From (2.21), on account of (2.18), (2.20), and the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} |v_n(t) - v_n(s)| &\leq \int_s^t |v'_n(\xi)| d\xi \leq \\ &\leq \int_s^t \bar{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi + \frac{1}{|c| + q^*} \int_s^t |q(\xi)| d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t, \quad n \in N. \end{aligned} \quad (2.23)$$

From (2.20) and (2.23) it follows that the sequence of functions $\{v_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty}$ is uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$. According to Arzelà–Ascoli lemma we can assume, without loss of generality, that there exists $v_0 \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow +\infty} v_k(t) = v_0(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (2.24)$$

Moreover, on account of (2.20), we have

$$\|v_0\| \leq 1. \quad (2.25)$$

On the other hand, the integration of (2.21) from a to t yields

$$v_n(t) = v_n(a) + \int_a^t \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(v_n)(s) ds + \frac{1}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \int_a^t \tilde{q}_{b_n}(s) ds \text{ for } n \in N.$$

Hence, in view of (2.18) and (2.24), we get

$$v_0(t) = v_0(a) + \int_a^t \ell(v_0)(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a. \quad (2.26)$$

Thus $v_0 \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and

$$|v_0(t) - v_0(s)| = \left| \int_s^t \ell(v_0)(\xi) d\xi \right| \leq \|v_0\| \int_s^t \bar{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t.$$

The last inequality, together with (2.25) and the fact that $\bar{\ell} \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, ensures that there exists a finite limit $v_0(+\infty)$. Consequently, from (2.18), (2.22), and (2.24) we also obtain

$$\omega(v_0) = 0. \quad (2.27)$$

Now (2.26) and (2.27) imply that v_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀). Therefore,

$$v_0 \equiv 0. \quad (2.28)$$

Since $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, we can choose $a_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that

$$\int_{a_0}^{+\infty} \bar{\ell}(1)(s) ds \leq \frac{1}{5}. \quad (2.29)$$

According to (2.24) and (2.28) there exists $n_0 \in N$ such that

$$|v_n(t)| \leq \frac{1}{5} \text{ for } t \in [a, a_0], \quad n \geq n_0. \quad (2.30)$$

On the other hand, from (2.21), in view of (2.18) and (2.20), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & |v_n(t) - v_n(a_0)| \leq \\ & \leq \int_{a_0}^t |\tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(v_n)(s)| ds + \frac{2q^*}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \leq \int_{a_0}^{+\infty} \bar{\ell}(1)(s) ds + \frac{2}{n} \text{ for } t \geq a_0. \end{aligned}$$

Hence, on account of (2.29) and (2.30), we obtain

$$|v_n(t)| \leq \frac{4}{5} \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \geq \max\{n_0, 5\}$$

which contradicts (2.20). \square

2.3. Boundary Value Problems on Finite Interval. The following assertions are results from [9], formulated in a suitable for us form.

Lemma 2.3 ([9, Theorem 4.4, p. 83]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let there exist a function $\widehat{\gamma} \in \widetilde{C}([a, b];]0, +\infty[)$ such that*

$$\begin{aligned}\widehat{\gamma}'(t) &\geq \widehat{\ell}_0(\widehat{\gamma})(t) + \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \\ \widehat{\gamma}(b) - \widehat{\gamma}(a) &< 3.\end{aligned}$$

Then the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t), \quad v(a) = 0 \quad (2.31)$$

has only a trivial solution.

Lemma 2.4 ([9, Theorem 4.2, p. 82]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let*

$$\begin{aligned}\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds &< 1, \\ \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds &< 1 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds}.\end{aligned}$$

Then the problem (2.31) has only a trivial solution.

Lemma 2.5 ([9, Theorem 4.10, p. 86]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let there exist a function $\widehat{\gamma} \in \widetilde{C}([a, b];]0, +\infty[)$ such that*

$$\begin{aligned}-\widehat{\gamma}'(t) &\geq \widehat{\ell}_1(\widehat{\gamma})(t) + \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \\ \widehat{\gamma}(a) - \widehat{\gamma}(b) &< 3.\end{aligned}$$

Then the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t), \quad v(b) = 0 \quad (2.32)$$

has only a trivial solution.

Lemma 2.6 ([9, Theorem 4.8, p. 86]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let*

$$\begin{aligned}\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds &< 1, \\ \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds &< 1 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds}.\end{aligned}$$

Then the problem (2.32) has only a trivial solution.

Lemma 2.7 ([9, Theorem 4.1, p. 80]). Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let either

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 1,$$

$$\frac{\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 2 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds},$$

or

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 1,$$

$$\frac{\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 2 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds}.$$

Then the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t), \quad v(a) - v(b) = 0$$

has only a trivial solution.

Lemma 2.8 ([9, Theorem 2.1, p. 17]). Let $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$ and let there exist $\widehat{\gamma} \in \widetilde{C}([a, b];]0, +\infty[)$ such that

$$\widehat{\gamma}'(t) \geq \widehat{\ell}(\widehat{\gamma})(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b].$$

Then every function $v \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; \mathbb{R})$, satisfying

$$v'(t) \geq \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad v(a) \geq 0, \quad (2.33)$$

is nonnegative.

Lemma 2.9 ([9, Theorem 2.5, p. 22]). Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let $\widehat{\ell}_1$ be an a -Volterra operator. Let, moreover,

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1.$$

Then every function $v \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; \mathbb{R})$ satisfying (2.33) is nonnegative.

Remark 2.1. Note that under the conditions of Lemma 2.8 or Lemma 2.9, the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) + \widehat{q}(t), \quad v(a) = c$$

is uniquely solvable for any $\widehat{q} \in L([a, b]; R)$ and $c \in R$. Moreover, the solution is nonnegative whenever $\widehat{q} \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$.

Indeed, let the assumptions of Lemma 2.8 or Lemma 2.9 be fulfilled and let v be a solution to (2.31). Then, obviously, $-v$ is also a solution to (2.31), and so both v and $-v$ are nonnegative functions. Therefore, $v \equiv 0$. Thus the assertion follows from Proposition 1.3 and Lemmas 2.8 and 2.9.

Lemma 2.10 ([9, Theorem 2.12, p. 26]). *Let $-\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$ and let there exist $\widehat{\gamma} \in \widetilde{C}([a, b];]0, +\infty[)$ such that*

$$\widehat{\gamma}'(t) \leq \widehat{\ell}(\widehat{\gamma})(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b].$$

Then every function $v \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying

$$v'(t) \leq \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad v(b) \geq 0 \quad (2.34)$$

is nonnegative.

Lemma 2.11 ([9, Theorem 2.16, p. 28]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let $\widehat{\ell}_0$ be a b -Volterra operator. Let, moreover,*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 1.$$

Then every function $v \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying (2.34) is nonnegative.

Remark 2.2. Analogously to Remark 2.1 it can be shown that under the conditions of Lemma 2.10 or Lemma 2.11, the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) + \widehat{q}(t), \quad v(b) = c$$

is uniquely solvable for any $\widehat{q} \in L([a, b]; R)$ and $c \in R$. Moreover, the solution is nonnegative whenever $-\widehat{q} \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$.

Lemma 2.12 ([9, Theorem 2.4, p. 21]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \frac{\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1.$$

Then every function $v \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying

$$v'(t) \geq \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad v(a) - v(b) \geq 0 \quad (2.35)$$

is nonnegative.

Lemma 2.13 ([9, Theorem 2.15, p. 28]). *Let $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$ with $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, and let*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \frac{\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1.$$

Then every function $v \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying (2.35) is nonpositive.

Remark 2.3. Analogously to Remark 2.1 it can be shown that under the conditions of Lemma 2.12 or Lemma 2.13, the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) + \widehat{q}(t), \quad v(a) - v(b) = c$$

is uniquely solvable for any $\widehat{q} \in L([a, b]; R)$ and $c \in R$. Moreover, the solution is nonnegative, resp. nonpositive, whenever $\widehat{q} \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$.

2.4. Nonnegative Solutions to a Certain Differential Inequality.

Lemma 2.14. *Let $\ell \in \widetilde{\mathcal{P}}$ and let there exist $\gamma \in \widetilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ such that*

$$\gamma'(t) \geq \ell(\gamma)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (2.36)$$

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow +\infty} \gamma(t) = +\infty. \quad (2.37)$$

Then every bounded function $u \in \widetilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, satisfying

$$u'(t) \geq \ell(u)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad u(a) \geq 0, \quad (2.38)$$

is nonnegative.

Proof. Assume on the contrary that there exist a bounded function $u \in \widetilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and $t_0 > a$ such that u satisfies (2.38) and

$$u(t_0) < 0. \quad (2.39)$$

Put

$$\lambda = \sup \left\{ -\frac{u(t)}{\gamma(t)} : t \geq a \right\}. \quad (2.40)$$

Obviously, by virtue of (2.39),

$$\lambda > 0. \quad (2.41)$$

Moreover, in view of (2.37) and the assumption that u is a bounded function, there exists $t_1 \geq a$ such that

$$\lambda = -\frac{u(t_1)}{\gamma(t_1)}. \quad (2.42)$$

Further, put

$$w(t) = \lambda\gamma(t) + u(t) \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

Then, on account of (2.36), (2.38), (2.40)–(2.42), we have

$$w'(t) \geq \ell(w)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (2.43)$$

$$w(t) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad w(a) > 0, \quad (2.44)$$

$$w(t_1) = 0. \quad (2.45)$$

Now, due to (2.44) and the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, from (2.43) we get $w'(t) \geq 0$ for $t \geq a$. Consequently, $w(t) > 0$ for $t \geq a$, which contradicts (2.45). \square

Remark 2.4. Under the conditions of Lemma 2.14, the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.3₀) is a trivial solution. Indeed, let u be a bounded solution to (1.1₀), (1.3₀). Then, obviously, $-u$ is also a bounded solution to (1.1₀), (1.3₀), and both u and $-u$ are nonnegative functions. Therefore, $u \equiv 0$.

3. Main Results

3.1. Necessary and Sufficient Conditions.

Theorem 3.1. *Let $\omega \in \text{ch}$ and the condition (1.14) be fulfilled. Then the problem (1.1), (1.2) has a unique bounded solution if and only if the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution.*

Proof. Evidently, if the problem (1.1), (1.2) has a unique bounded solution for arbitrary $c \in R$ and $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying (1.14), then the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution.

If the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution, then, according to Lemmas 2.1 and 2.2, the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution u and there exists a sequence of functions $\{u_{b_n}\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that $\omega(u_{b_n}) = c$ ($n \in N$), and (2.2) holds. Consequently, since $\omega \in \text{ch}$, we also have $\omega(u) = c$, i.e., u is a bounded solution to the problem (1.1), (1.2). The uniqueness of u is evident. \square

Theorem 3.2. *Let $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$ and the condition (1.14) be satisfied. Let, furthermore, the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) be a trivial solution. Then the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow +\infty} \int_a^t q(s) ds, \quad (3.1)$$

then the problem (1.1), (1.2) has a unique bounded solution.

Proof. If the assumptions of theorem are fulfilled, then, according to Lemmas 2.1 and 2.2, the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution u . Furthermore, there exist a sequence of functions $\{u_{b_n}\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that $\omega(u_{b_n}) = c$ ($n \in N$), and (2.2) holds. Thus, if there exists a finite limit (3.1), there also exists a finite limit $u(+\infty)$. Consequently,

$u \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ and since $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, we also have $\omega(u) = c$, i.e., u is a bounded solution to the problem (1.1), (1.2). In this case, the uniqueness of u is evident. \square

3.2. Bounded Solutions. In the first part of this subsection, there are formulated theorems dealing with the existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to the problems (1.1), (1.k) ($k = 3, 4, 5$). The proofs of those theorems can be found in the second part of this subsection.

Theorem 3.3. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and let the condition (1.14) be satisfied. Let, moreover, there exist $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ such that*

$$\gamma'(t) \geq \ell_0(\gamma)(t) + \ell_1(1)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (3.2)$$

$$\gamma(+\infty) - \gamma(a) < 3. \quad (3.3)$$

Then the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 3.1. Theorem 3.3 is unimprovable in the sense that the strict inequality (3.3) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see Example 5.1, p. 40).

Theorem 3.4. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and let the condition (1.14) be satisfied. Let, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (3.4)$$

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1 + 2\sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds}. \quad (3.5)$$

Then the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 3.2. Denote by G_a the set of pairs $(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+$ such that

$$x < 1, \quad y < 1 + 2\sqrt{1 - x}$$

(see Figure 3.1).

Theorem 3.4 states that if the condition (1.14) is fulfilled, $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in G_a,$$

then the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution.

Below we will show (see On Remark 3.2, p. 40) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_a$ there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, and $c \in R$

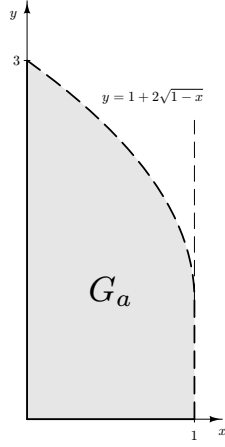


Figure 3.1

such that (1.14) holds,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (1.1), (1.3) with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ has no solution. In particular, the strict inequalities (3.4) and (3.5) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

Theorem 3.5. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and let the condition (1.14) be satisfied. Let, moreover, there exist $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ such that*

$$-\gamma'(t) \geq \ell_1(\gamma)(t) + \ell_0(1)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (3.6)$$

$$\gamma(+\infty) > 0, \quad (3.7)$$

$$\gamma(a) - \gamma(+\infty) < 3. \quad (3.8)$$

Then the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique solution.

Remark 3.3. Theorem 3.5 is unimprovable in the sense that neither one of the strict inequalities (3.7) and (3.8) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see Example 5.2 on p. 41 and Example 5.3 on p. 42).

Theorem 3.6. Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and let the condition (1.14) be satisfied. Let, moreover,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (3.9)$$

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds}. \quad (3.10)$$

Then the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique solution.

Remark 3.4. Denote by $G_{+\infty}$ the set of pairs $(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+$ such that

$$y < 1, \quad x < 1 + 2\sqrt{1-y}$$

(see Figure 3.2).

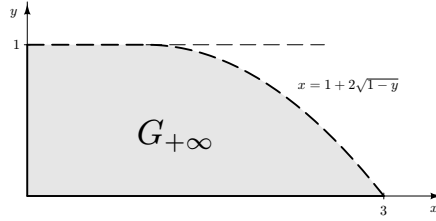


Figure 3.2

Theorem 3.6 states that if there exists a finite limit (3.1), $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in G_{+\infty},$$

then the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique bounded solution.

Below we will show (see On Remark 3.4, p. 43) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_{+\infty}$ there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, and $c \in R$ such that there exists a finite limit (3.1),

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (1.1), (1.4) with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ has no solution. In particular, the strict inequalities (3.9) and (3.10) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

Theorem 3.7. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and let the condition (1.14) be satisfied. Let, moreover, either*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (3.11)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 2 + 2\sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds}, \quad (3.12)$$

or

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (3.13)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 2 + 2\sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds}. \quad (3.14)$$

Then the equation (1.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then the problem (1.1), (1.5) has a unique solution.

Remark 3.5. Put

$$G_p^+ = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, \frac{x}{1-x} < y < 2 + 2\sqrt{1-x} \right\},$$

$$G_p^- = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, \frac{y}{1-y} < x < 2 + 2\sqrt{1-y} \right\}$$

(see Figure 3.3).

Theorem 3.7 states that if there exists a finite limit (3.1), $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in G_p^+ \cup G_p^-,$$

then the problem (1.1), (1.5) has a unique bounded solution.

Below we will show (see On Remark 3.5, p. 44) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_p^+ \cup G_p^-$ there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, and $c \in R$ such that there exists a finite limit (3.1),

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

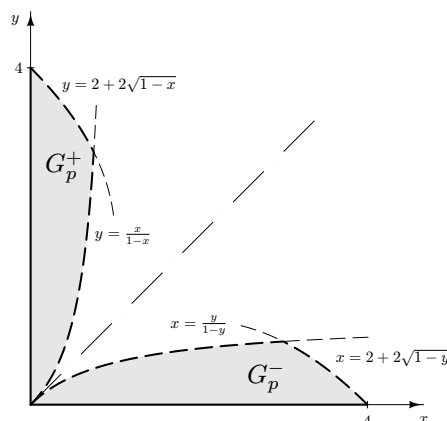


Figure 3.3

and the problem (1.1), (1.5) with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ has no solution. In particular, neither of the strict inequalities in (3.11)–(3.14) can be replaced by the nonstrict one.

Remark 3.6. In Theorems 3.1–3.7, the condition (1.14) is essential and it cannot be omitted. Indeed, let $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, $p \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ be such that

$$0 \neq \int_a^{+\infty} p(s) ds < 1,$$

and consider the equation

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(a) + q(t). \quad (3.15)$$

Put

$$\ell(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} p(t)v(a) \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

Then the assumptions imposed on the operator ℓ (with $\ell_0 \equiv \ell$ and $\ell_1 \equiv 0$) in Theorems 3.3–3.7 are fulfilled.

On the other hand, every solution u to (3.15) is of the form

$$u(t) = c_0 \left(1 + \int_a^t p(s) ds \right) + \int_a^t q(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a,$$

where $c_0 \in R$. However, u is bounded if and only if the condition (1.14) is fulfilled.

Remark 3.7. It is clear that if the problem (1.1), (1.4), resp. (1.1), (1.5), has a solution for some $c \in R$, then there exists a finite limit (3.1). Thus the condition (3.1) in Theorems 3.5–3.7 is also a necessary condition for the unique solvability of the mentioned problems.

Remark 3.8. Obviously, if ℓ is an a -Volterra operator and the assumptions of either Theorem 3.3 or Theorem 3.4 are fulfilled, then all solutions to the equation (1.1) are bounded.

In the proofs listed below, whenever $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, then the operator $\widehat{\ell}$ is defined by (1.9) with φ and ψ given by (1.6)–(1.8).

Proof of Theorem 3.3. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$ and

$$\widehat{\gamma}(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{cases} \varphi^{-1}(\gamma)(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b[, \\ \gamma(+\infty) & \text{for } t = b, \end{cases} \quad (3.16)$$

where φ is given by (1.6) and (1.8). Then the assumptions of Lemma 2.3 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Theorem 3.1 and Proposition 1.2, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.4. All the assumptions of Lemma 2.4 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Theorem 3.1 and Proposition 1.2, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.5. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$ and define function $\widehat{\gamma}$ by (3.16), where φ is given by (1.6) and (1.8). Then the assumptions of Lemma 2.5 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Theorem 3.2 and Proposition 1.2, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.6. All the assumptions of Lemma 2.6 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Theorem 3.2 and Proposition 1.2, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.7. All the assumptions of Lemma 2.7 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Theorem 3.2 and Proposition 1.2, the theorem is valid. \square

3.3. Sign Constant Solutions. As in the previous section, first we formulate theorems dealing with the existence and uniqueness of a sign constant bounded solution to the problems (1.1), (1.k) ($k = 3, 4, 5$). The proofs of those theorems can be found at the end of this subsection.

Theorem 3.8. *Let $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$. Then for every $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution and this solution is nonnegative if and only if there exists $\gamma \in \widetilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying (2.36).*

Theorem 3.9. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$. Let, moreover, ℓ_1 be an a -Volterra operator and*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1. \quad (3.17)$$

Then for every $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution and this solution is nonnegative.

Remark 3.9. Theorem 3.9 is unimprovable in the sense that the condition (3.17) can be replaced neither by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1,$$

nor by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon_0 \geq 0$ and $\varepsilon > 0$ would be. More precisely, if the condition (3.17) is violated, then either the problem (1.1), (1.3) is not uniquely solvable for some $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ (see On Remark 3.2, p. 40) or there exist $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ such that the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution, but this solution is not nonnegative (see Example 5.4 on p. 47 and Example 5.5 on p. 48).

Theorem 3.10. *Let $-\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$. Then for every $-q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique solution and this solution is nonnegative if and only if there exists $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying (3.7) and*

$$\gamma'(t) \leq \ell(\gamma)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a. \quad (3.18)$$

Theorem 3.11. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ with $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$. Let, moreover, ℓ_0 be an anti-Volterra operator and*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1. \quad (3.19)$$

Then for every $-q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique solution and this solution is nonnegative.

Remark 3.10. Theorem 3.11 is unimprovable in the sense that the condition (3.19) can be replaced neither by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1,$$

nor by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon_0,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ and $\varepsilon_0 \geq 0$ would be. More precisely, if the condition (3.19) is violated, then either the problem (1.1), (1.4) is not uniquely solvable for some $-q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ (see On Remark 3.4,

p. 43) or there exist $-q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ such that the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique solution, but this solution is not nonnegative (see Example 5.4 on p. 47 and Example 5.5 on p. 48).

Theorem 3.12. *Let $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$. Let, moreover, $k, j \in \{0, 1\}$, $k \neq j$, and*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_k(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \frac{\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_k(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_k(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_j(1)(s) ds \leq 1. \quad (3.20)$$

Then for every $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ the problem (1.1), (1.5) has a unique solution u , and this solution satisfies the inequality

$$(-1)^k u(t) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

Remark 3.11. Put

$$H^+ = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, \frac{x}{1-x} < y \leq 1 \right\},$$

$$H^- = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, \frac{y}{1-y} < x \leq 1 \right\}$$

(see Figures 3.4 and 3.5)

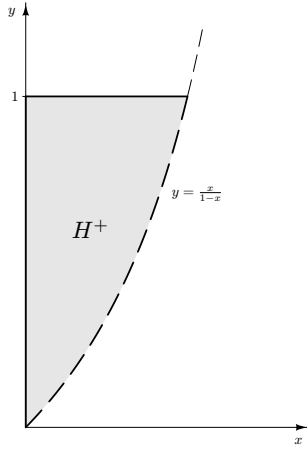


Figure 3.4

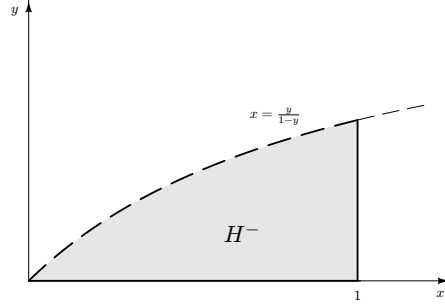


Figure 3.5

Theorem 3.12 states, that if $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in H^+,$$

resp.

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in H^-,$$

then for every $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$, the problem (1.1), (1.5) has a unique solution u , and this solution is nonnegative, resp. nonpositive.

Below we will show (see On Remark 3.11, p. 50) that for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin H^+$, resp. for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin H^-$, $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, and $c \in R_+$ such that

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (1.1), (1.5) with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ has a solution, which is not nonnegative, resp. nonpositive. In particular, neither one of the strict inequalities in (3.20) can be replaced by the nonstrict one. Furthermore, the nonstrict inequality in (3.20) cannot be replaced by the inequality

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_j(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ would be.

In the proofs listed below, whenever $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ and $\omega \in \text{ch}(\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0)$, then the operators $\hat{\ell}$ and $\hat{\omega}$ are defined by (1.9) and (1.10), respectively, with φ and ψ given by (1.6)–(1.8).

Proof of Theorem 3.8. First suppose that for every $q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c \in R_+$ the problem (1.1), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution and this solution is nonnegative. Then, since $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, the problem

$$u'(t) = \ell(u)(t), \quad u(a) = 1$$

has a positive bounded solution u and we can put $\gamma \equiv u$.

Now suppose that there exists a function $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying (2.36). Obviously, γ is nondecreasing. Therefore, there exists a finite or infinite limit

$$r \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \lim_{t \rightarrow +\infty} \gamma(t).$$

If $r = +\infty$, then by virtue of Remark 2.4 (see p. 22), the only bounded solution to (1.1₀), (1.3₀) is a trivial solution. Now, according to Theorem 3.1 and Lemma 2.14, there is a unique bounded solution u_0 to the problem

$$u'(t) = \ell(u)(t), \quad u(a) = 1,$$

and u_0 is nonnegative. Taking into account the condition $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, we get that

$$0 < u_0(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad \lim_{t \rightarrow +\infty} u_0(t) = u_0(+\infty) < +\infty.$$

Put

$$\alpha(t) = \begin{cases} \gamma(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, +\infty[\text{ if } r < +\infty, \\ u_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, +\infty[\text{ if } r = +\infty. \end{cases}$$

Obviously, $\alpha \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ and

$$\alpha'(t) \geq \ell(\alpha)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, +\infty[. \quad (3.21)$$

Let now $b \in]a, +\infty[$ and

$$\hat{\gamma}(t) = \begin{cases} \varphi^{-1}(\alpha)(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b[, \\ \alpha(+\infty) & \text{for } t = b, \end{cases}$$

where φ is given by (1.6) and (1.8). Then by virtue of (3.21), the assumptions of Lemma 2.8 hold. Consequently, according to Remark 2.1 and Proposition 1.1, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.9. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$. Then all the assumptions of Lemma 2.9 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Remark 2.1 and Proposition 1.1, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.10. First suppose that for every $c \in R_+$ and $-q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ the problem (1.1), (1.4) has a unique solution and this solution is nonnegative. Then, since $-\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, the problem

$$u'(t) = \ell(u)(t), \quad u(+\infty) = 1$$

has a positive solution u and we can put $\gamma \equiv u$.

Now suppose that there exists a function $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying (3.7) and (3.18). Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$. Then the assumptions of Lemma 2.10 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Remark 2.2 and Proposition 1.1, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.11. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$. Then the assumptions of Lemma 2.11 are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Remark 2.2 and Proposition 1.1, the theorem is valid. \square

Proof of Theorem 3.12. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$. If $k = 0$ (resp. $k = 1$), then the assumptions of Lemma 2.12 (resp. Lemma 2.13) are fulfilled. Consequently, according to Remark 2.3 and Proposition 1.1, the theorem is valid. \square

4. Equations with Deviating Arguments

In this section we will present some consequences of the main results from Section 3 for the equations with deviating arguments (1.15), (1.16), and (1.17), respectively.

In what follows we will use the notation

$$p_0(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m p_k(t), \quad g_0(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m g_k(t) \text{ for } t \geq a$$

4.1. Bounded Solutions.

Corollary 4.1. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied and let at least one of the following items be fulfilled:*

a) $\tau_k(t) \leq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$),

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) \exp\left(\int_s^{+\infty} p_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds < 3; \quad (4.1)$$

b)

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1 + 2\sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}. \quad (4.2)$$

Then for every $c \in R$ the problem (1.17), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 4.1. Corollary 4.1 is unimprovable. More precisely, neither one of the strict inequalities in (4.1) and (4.2) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see Example 5.1 on p. 40 and On Remark 3.2 on p. 40).

Remark 4.2. If $\tau_k(t) \leq t$, $\mu_k(t) \leq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), (1.14) is satisfied, and at least one of the conditions a) and b) in Corollary 4.1 is fulfilled, then every solution of the equation (1.17) is bounded.

Corollary 4.2. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied and let at least one of the following items be fulfilled:*

a) $\mu_k(t) \geq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$),

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) \exp\left(\int_a^s g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds < 3; \quad (4.3)$$

b)

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1 + 2\sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}. \quad (4.4)$$

Then the equation (1.17) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then for every $c \in R$ the problem (1.17), (1.4) has a unique solution.

Remark 4.3. Corollary 4.2 is unimprovable. More precisely, neither one of the strict inequalities in (4.3) and (4.4) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see Example 5.3 on p. 42 and On Remark 3.4 on p. 43).

Corollary 4.3. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied and let either*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad (4.5)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 2 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}, \quad (4.6)$$

or

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1, \quad (4.7)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 2 + 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}. \quad (4.8)$$

Then the equation (1.17) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then for every $c \in R$ the problem (1.17), (1.5) has a unique solution.

Remark 4.4. Corollary 4.3 is unimprovable in the sense that neither one of the strict inequalities in (4.5)–(4.8) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 3.5, p. 44).

4.2. Sign Constant Solutions.

Corollary 4.4. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied, $\mu_k(t) \leq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), and*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1. \quad (4.9)$$

Then for every $c \in R$ the problem (1.17), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution. If, moreover, $q(t) \geq 0$ for $t \geq a$ and $c \geq 0$, then this solution is nonnegative.

Remark 4.5. Corollary 4.4 is unimprovable in the sense that the condition (4.9) can be replaced neither by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1,$$

nor by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon_0 \geq 0$ and $\varepsilon > 0$ would be. More precisely, if the condition (4.9) is violated, then either the problem (1.17), (1.3) has no solution (see On Remark 3.2, p. 40) or this problem has a unique bounded solution which is not nonnegative (see Example 5.4 on p. 47 and Example 5.5 on p. 48).

Corollary 4.5. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied, $\int_a^{\tau_k^*} p_0(\xi) d\xi \neq 0$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), and let there exist $x > 0$ such that*

$$\operatorname{ess\,sup} \left\{ \int_t^{\tau_k(t)} p_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \eta_k(x) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m), \quad (4.10)$$

where

$$\eta_k(x) = \frac{1}{x} \ln \left(x + \frac{x}{\exp \left(x \int_a^{\tau_k^*} p_0(\xi) d\xi \right) - 1} \right),$$

$$\tau_k^* = \operatorname{ess\,sup} \{ \tau_k(t) : t \geq a \}.$$

Then for every $c \in R$ the problem (1.15), (1.3) has a unique bounded solution. If, moreover, $q(t) \geq 0$ for $t \geq a$ and $c \geq 0$, then this solution is nonnegative.

Corollary 4.6. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied, $\tau_k(t) \geq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), and*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1. \quad (4.11)$$

Then the equation (1.17) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then for every $c \in R$ the problem (1.17), (1.4) has a unique solution. Furthermore, if $q(t) \leq 0$ for $t \geq a$ and $c \geq 0$, then this solution is nonnegative.

Remark 4.6. Corollary 4.6 is unimprovable in the sense that the condition (4.11) can be replaced neither by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1,$$

nor by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon_0,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ and $\varepsilon_0 \geq 0$ would be. More precisely, if the condition (4.11) is violated, then either the problem (1.17), (1.4) has no solution (see On Remark 3.4, p. 43) or this problem has a unique bounded solution which is not nonnegative (see Example 5.4 on p. 47 and Example 5.5 on p. 48).

Corollary 4.7. *Let the condition (1.14) be satisfied, $\int_{\mu_k^*}^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi \neq 0$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), and let there exist $x > 0$ such that*

$$\operatorname{ess\,sup}_{\mu_k(t)} \left\{ \int_a^t g_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \vartheta_k(x) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m),$$

where

$$\vartheta_k(x) = \frac{1}{x} \ln \left(x + \frac{x}{\exp \left(x \int_{\mu_k^*}^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi \right) - 1} \right),$$

$$\mu_k^* = \operatorname{ess\,inf} \{ \mu_k(t) : t \geq a \}.$$

Then the equation (1.16) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (3.1), then for every $c \in \mathbb{R}$ the problem (1.16), (1.4) has a unique solution. Furthermore, if $q(t) \leq 0$ for $t \geq a$ and $c \geq 0$, then this solution is nonnegative.

Corollary 4.8. *Let $q \in L([a, +\infty[; \mathbb{R}_+)$ and*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \frac{\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1, \quad (4.12)$$

resp.

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \frac{\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1. \quad (4.13)$$

Then for every $c \in \mathbb{R}_+$ the problem (1.17), (1.5) has a unique solution u , and this solution satisfies the inequality

$$u(t) \geq 0 \quad \text{for } t \geq a,$$

resp.

$$u(t) \leq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

Remark 4.7. Corollary 4.8 is unimprovable in the sense that neither one of the strict inequalities in (4.12) and (4.13) can be replaced by the nonstrict one. Furthermore, the nonstrict inequalities in (4.12) and (4.13) cannot be replaced by the inequalities

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \text{resp.} \quad \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ would be (see On Remark 3.11, p. 50).

4.3. Proofs. Define operators ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 by

$$\begin{aligned} \ell_0(v)(t) &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{k=1}^m p_k(t)v(\tau_k(t)) \text{ for } t \geq a, \\ \ell_1(v)(t) &\stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{k=1}^m g_k(t)v(\mu_k(t)) \text{ for } t \geq a. \end{aligned} \tag{4.14}$$

Then Corollary 4.3 follows from Theorem 3.7, Corollary 4.4 follows from Theorems 3.4 and 3.9, Corollary 4.6 follows from Theorems 3.6 and 3.11, and Corollary 4.8 follows from Theorem 3.12.

Therefore we will prove only Corollaries 4.1, 4.2, 4.5, and 4.7.

Proof of Corollary 4.1. a) Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\varepsilon \exp\left(\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds\right) + \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) \exp\left(\int_s^{+\infty} p_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds \leq 3,$$

and put

$$\gamma(t) = \exp\left(\int_a^t p_0(s) ds\right) \left(\varepsilon + \int_a^t g_0(s) \exp\left(-\int_a^s p_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds\right) \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

It can be easily verified that γ satisfies the inequalities (3.2) and (3.3) with ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 defined by (4.14). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 3.3 are fulfilled.

b) Obviously, the assumptions of Theorem 3.4 are satisfied, where ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 are defined by (4.14). \square

Proof of Corollary 4.2. a) Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\varepsilon \exp\left(\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) + \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) \exp\left(\int_a^s g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds \leq 3,$$

and put

$$\gamma(t) = \exp\left(\int_t^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) \left(\varepsilon + \int_t^{+\infty} p_0(s) \exp\left(-\int_s^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds\right) \\ \text{for } t \geq a.$$

It can be easily verified that γ satisfies the inequalities (3.6), (3.7), and (3.8) with ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 defined by (4.14). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 3.5 are fulfilled.

b) Obviously, the assumptions of Theorem 3.6 are satisfied, where ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 are defined by (4.14). \square

Proof of Corollary 4.5. Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\text{ess sup} \left\{ \int_t^{\tau_k(t)} p_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \\ < \frac{1}{x} \ln \left(x + \frac{x(1-\varepsilon)}{\exp\left(x \int_a^{\tau_k^*} p_0(\xi) d\xi\right) - (1-\varepsilon)} \right) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m),$$

and put

$$\gamma(t) = \frac{\exp\left(x \int_a^t p_0(s) ds\right) - (1-\varepsilon)}{\exp\left(x \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds\right) - 1} \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

It can be easily verified that γ satisfies the assumptions of Theorem 3.3 with ℓ_0 defined by (4.14) and $\ell_1 \equiv 0$, as well as the assumptions of Theorem 3.8 with

$$\ell(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sum_{k=1}^m p_k(t) v(\tau_k(t)) \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

This complete the proof. \square

Proof of Corollary 4.7. Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\text{ess sup} \left\{ \int_{\mu_k(t)}^t g_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \\ < \frac{1}{x} \ln \left(x + \frac{x(1-\varepsilon)}{\exp\left(x \int_{\mu_k^*}^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) - (1-\varepsilon)} \right) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m),$$

and put

$$\gamma(t) = \frac{\exp\left(x \int_t^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) - (1 - \varepsilon)}{\exp\left(x \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) - 1} \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

It can be easily verified that γ satisfies the assumptions of Theorem 3.5 with ℓ_1 defined by (4.14) and $\ell_0 \equiv 0$, as well as the assumptions of Theorem 3.10 with

$$\ell(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} - \sum_{k=1}^m g_k(t)v(\mu_k(t)) \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

This complete the proof. \square

5. Examples

Remark 5.1. Let functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$ be such that on the segment $[a, b]$ the problem

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)), \quad u(a) = 0, \quad (5.1)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)), \quad u(b) = 0, \quad (5.2)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)), \quad u(a) - u(b) = 0, \quad (5.3)$$

has a nontrivial solution. Then, according to Remark 1.1 (see p. 11), there exist $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ and $c \in R$ such that on the segment $[a, b]$ the problem

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + q_0(t), \quad u(a) = c, \quad (5.4)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + q_0(t), \quad u(b) = c, \quad (5.5)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + q_0(t), \quad u(a) - u(b) = c, \quad (5.6)$$

has no solution.

Further, if we put

$$\ell_0(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{cases} p(t)v(\tau(t)) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases} \quad (5.7)$$

$$\ell_1(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{cases} g(t)v(\mu(t)) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases} \quad (5.8)$$

$$q(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{cases} q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases} \quad (5.9)$$

then, obviously, the condition (1.14) is satisfied, there exists a finite limit (3.1), and the problem (1.1), (1.3), resp. (1.1), (1.4), resp. (1.1), (1.5), with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ has no solution.

Example 5.1. Let $t_0 \in]a, b[$ and choose $g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b g(s) ds = 2.$$

Put

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} b & \text{for } t \in [a, t_0[, \\ t_0 & \text{for } t \in [t_0, b], \end{cases}$$

and

$$\gamma(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 4 & \text{for } t > b. \end{cases}$$

Then γ satisfies all the assumptions of Theorem 3.3, where $\ell_0 \equiv 0$ and ℓ_1 is defined by (5.8), except of the condition (3.3), instead of which we have

$$\gamma(+\infty) - \gamma(a) = 3.$$

On the other hand, the problem (5.1) with $p \equiv 0$ has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_0[, \\ 1 - \int_{t_0}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_0, b]. \end{cases}$$

Consequently, according to Remark 5.1 (see p. 39), we have shown that in Theorem 3.3, resp. in Corollary 4.1 a), the strict inequality (3.3), resp. the strict inequality (4.1), cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one.

On Remark 3.2. According to Remark 5.1 (see p. 39), for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_a$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$ in such a way that

$$\int_a^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^b g(s) ds = y_0 \quad (5.10)$$

and such that the problem (5.1) has a nontrivial solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_a$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs to one of the following sets:

$$G_a^1 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x \geq 1 \right\},$$

$$G_a^2 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, y \geq 1 + 2\sqrt{1-x} \right\}.$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_a^1$, $t_0 \in [a, b]$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_0} p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b p(s) ds = x_0 - 1, \quad \int_a^b g(s) ds = y_0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_0$ and $\mu \equiv a$. Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.1) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \int_a^t p(s) ds \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b].$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_a^2$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = \sqrt{1 - x_0},$$

$$\int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_2}^{t_3} g(s) ds = y_0 - (1 + 2\sqrt{1 - x_0}), \quad \int_{t_3}^b g(s) ds = \sqrt{1 - x_0}.$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_1$ and

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} b & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[\cup [t_3, b], \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.1) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} \int_a^t p(s) ds + \sqrt{1 - x_0} \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 - \int_{t_1}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[, \\ - \int_{t_3}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_3, b]. \end{cases}$$

Example 5.2. Let $c > 0$, $-q \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, and $g \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ be such that

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_t^{+\infty} g(s) ds > 0 \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

Put

$$\gamma(t) = \int_t^{+\infty} g(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

Then $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$, satisfies the differential inequality (3.18) with

$$\ell(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} -g(t)v(a) \text{ for } t \in [a, +\infty[,$$

and (3.6) with $\ell_1 \equiv -\ell$ and $\ell_0 \equiv 0$.

On the other hand,

$$\gamma(+\infty) = 0,$$

the condition (3.8) holds and every solution to (1.1) can be written in the form

$$u(t) = u_0 \left(1 - \int_a^t g(s) ds \right) + \int_a^t q(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a,$$

where $u_0 \in R$. Moreover,

$$u(t) \leq u_0 \left(1 - \int_a^t g(s) ds \right) = u_0 \gamma(t) \text{ for } t \geq a.$$

Consequently,

$$u(+\infty) \leq 0,$$

and so the problem (1.1), (1.4) has no solution.

Therefore, the condition (3.7) in Theorem 3.5 is essential and it cannot be omitted.

Example 5.3. Let $t_0 \in [a, b]$ and choose $p \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_0} p(s) ds = 2, \quad \int_{t_0}^b p(s) ds = 1.$$

Put

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_0 & \text{for } [a, t_0[, \\ a & \text{for } [t_0, b], \end{cases}$$

and

$$\gamma(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 1 & \text{for } t > b. \end{cases}$$

Then γ satisfies all the assumptions of Theorem 3.5, where $\ell_1 \equiv 0$ and ℓ_0 is defined by (5.7), except of the condition (3.8), instead of which we have

$$\gamma(a) - \gamma(+\infty) = 3.$$

On the other hand, the problem (5.2) with $g \equiv 0$ has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 - \int_t^{t_0} p(s) ds & \text{for } [a, t_0[, \\ \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } [t_0, b]. \end{cases}$$

Consequently, according to Remark 5.1 (see p. 39), we have shown that in Theorem 3.5, resp. in Corollary 4.2 a), the strict inequality (3.8), resp. (4.3) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one.

On Remark 3.4. According to Remark 5.1 (see p. 39), for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_{+\infty}$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$ in such a way that (5.10) holds and such that the problem (5.2) has a nontrivial solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_{+\infty}$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs to one of the following sets:

$$G_{+\infty}^1 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y \geq 1 \right\},$$

$$G_{+\infty}^2 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, x \geq 1 + 2\sqrt{1-y} \right\}.$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_{+\infty}^1$, $t_0 \in [a, b]$, and let $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ be such that

$$\int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds = y_0 - 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_a^b p(s) ds = x_0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$ and $\mu \equiv t_0$. Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.2) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \int_t^b g(s) ds \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b].$$

Now suppose $(x_0, y_0) \in G_{+\infty}^2$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < b$. Let $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ be such that

$$\int_a^{t_3} g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_3}^b g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = \sqrt{1-y_0},$$

$$\int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = x_0 - (1 + 2\sqrt{1-y_0}), \quad \int_{t_2}^{t_3} p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_3}^b p(s) ds = \sqrt{1-y_0}.$$

Put $\mu \equiv t_3$ and

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_3 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[\cup [t_2, t_3[, \\ b & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_3, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.2) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} -\int_t^{t_1} p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 - \int_t^{t_3} p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[, \\ \int_t^b g(s) ds + \sqrt{1-y_0} \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_3, b]. \end{cases}$$

On Remark 3.5. According to Remark 5.1 (see p. 39), for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_p^+ \cup G_p^-$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$ in such a way that (5.10) holds and such that the problem (5.3) has a nontrivial solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin G_p^+ \cup G_p^-$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs at least to one of the following sets:

$$\begin{aligned} G_1 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x \geq 1, y \geq 1 \right\}, \\ G_2 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, y \geq 2 + 2\sqrt{1-x} \right\}, \\ G_3 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, x \geq 2 + 2\sqrt{1-y} \right\}, \\ G_4 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, y \leq x \leq \frac{y}{1-y} \right\}, \\ G_5 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : 0 < x < 1, x \leq y \leq \frac{x}{1-x} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_1$, $t_0 \in [a, b]$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_0} p(s) ds = x_0 - 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b g(s) ds = y_0 - 1.$$

Put

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_0 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_0[, \\ b & \text{for } t \in [t_0, b], \end{cases} \quad \mu(t) = \begin{cases} a & \text{for } t \in [a, t_0[, \\ t_0 & \text{for } t \in [t_0, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.3) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} \int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_0[, \\ \int_{t_0}^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_0, b]. \end{cases}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_2$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < t_4 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = \sqrt{1-x_0}, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = 1, \\ \int_{t_2}^{t_3} g(s) ds = y_0 - (2 + 2\sqrt{1-x_0}), \quad \int_{t_3}^{t_4} g(s) ds = \sqrt{1-x_0}, \quad \int_{t_4}^b g(s) ds = 1. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_1$ and

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} t_4 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[\cup [t_4, b], \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[\cup [t_3, t_4[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3]. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.3) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} \int_a^t p(s) ds + \sqrt{1-x_0} \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 - \int_{t_1}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[, \\ - \int_{t_3}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_3, t_4[, \\ -\sqrt{1-x_0} \int_t^b g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_4, b]. \end{cases}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_3$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < t_4 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_4} g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_4}^b g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = \sqrt{1-y_0},$$

$$\int_{t_2}^{t_3} p(s) ds = x_0 - (2 + 2\sqrt{1 - y_0}), \quad \int_{t_3}^{t_4} p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_4}^b p(s) ds = \sqrt{1 - y_0}.$$

Put $\mu \equiv t_4$ and

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_4 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[\cup [t_3, t_4[, \\ b & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[, \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[\cup [t_4, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.3) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} -\sqrt{1 - y_0} \int_a^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ -\int_t^{t_2} p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[, \\ 1 - \int_t^{t_4} p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_3, t_4[, \\ \int_t^b g(s) ds + \sqrt{1 - y_0} \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_4, b]. \end{cases}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_4$. If $x_0 = 0$ and $y_0 = 0$, then we put $p \equiv 0$, $g \equiv 0$, $\tau \equiv a$, and $\mu \equiv a$. Consequently, (5.10) is satisfied and every nonzero constant function is a nontrivial solution to the problem (5.3).

Assume that $x_0 \neq 0$ and $y_0 \neq 0$. Let $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; \mathbb{R}_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = 0, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = x_0 - \frac{x_0}{y_0} + 1, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = \frac{x_0}{y_0} - 1.$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_2$ and $\mu \equiv b$. Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.3) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 - \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 - \frac{y_0}{x_0} \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, b]. \end{cases}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in G_5$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_2} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = \frac{y_0}{x_0} - 1,$$

$$\int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = y_0 - \frac{y_0}{x_0} + 1, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = 0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$ and $\mu \equiv t_1$. Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.3) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 - \frac{x_0}{y_0} \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ 1 - \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

Example 5.4. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$, $\varepsilon > 0$, $\tau \equiv b$, $\mu \equiv a$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^b p(s) ds = 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^b g(s) ds < 1.$$

Note that the problem (5.1), resp. (5.2), has only the trivial solution. Indeed, the integration of (5.1), resp. (5.2) from a to b yields

$$u(b) = (1 + \varepsilon)u(b), \quad \text{resp.} \quad u(a) = u(a) \int_a^b g(s) ds,$$

whence we get $u(b) = 0$, resp. $u(a) = 0$. Consequently, $u'(t) = 0$ for $t \in [a, b]$, which together with $u(a) = 0$, resp. $u(b) = 0$, results in $u \equiv 0$.

Therefore, according to Proposition 1.3 (see p. 11), the problem

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)), \quad u(a) = 1, \quad (5.11)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)), \quad u(b) = 1, \quad (5.12)$$

has a unique solution u .

On the other hand, the integration of (5.11), resp. (5.12), from a to b yields

$$u(b) - 1 = u(b)(1 + \varepsilon) - \int_a^b g(s) ds,$$

resp.

$$1 - u(a) = (1 + \varepsilon) - u(a) \int_a^b g(s) ds,$$

whence we get

$$\varepsilon u(b) = \int_a^b g(s) ds - 1 < 0, \quad \text{resp.} \quad u(a) \left(1 - \int_a^b g(s) ds \right) = -\varepsilon < 0,$$

i.e., $u(b) < 0$, resp. $u(a) < 0$. Therefore, the problem (1.1₀), (1.3), resp. (1.1₀), (1.4), with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 are defined by (5.7) and (5.8), and $c = 1$ has a unique solution

$$u_0(t) = \begin{cases} u(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ u(b) & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases}$$

which assumes both positive and negative values.

Example 5.5. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$, $\varepsilon > 0$, $\tau \equiv b$, $\mu \equiv a$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^b p(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^b g(s) ds = 1 + \varepsilon.$$

Analogously to Example 5.4 one can verify that the problem (5.1), resp. (5.2), has only the trivial solution. Therefore, the problem (5.11), resp. (5.12), has a unique solution u .

On the other hand, the integration of (5.11), resp. (5.12), from a to b yields

$$u(b) - 1 = u(b) \int_a^b p(s) ds - (1 + \varepsilon),$$

resp.

$$1 - u(a) = \int_a^b p(s) ds - u(a)(1 + \varepsilon),$$

whence we get

$$u(b) \left(1 - \int_a^b p(s) ds \right) = -\varepsilon < 0, \quad \text{resp.} \quad \varepsilon u(a) = \int_a^b p(s) ds - 1 < 0,$$

i.e., $u(b) < 0$, resp. $u(a) < 0$. Therefore, the problem (1.1₀), (1.3), resp. (1.1₀), (1.4), with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$, where ℓ_0 and ℓ_1 are defined by (5.7) and (5.8), and $c = 1$ has a unique solution

$$u_0(t) = \begin{cases} u(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ u(b) & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases}$$

which assumes both positive and negative values.

Examples 5.4 and 5.5 show that the condition (3.17) in Theorem 3.9, resp. the condition (4.9) in Corollary 4.4, can be replaced neither by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1,$$

resp.

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1,$$

nor by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

resp.

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ would be.

Further these examples also show that the condition (3.19) in Theorem 3.11, resp. the condition (4.11) in Corollary 4.6, can be replaced neither by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1,$$

resp.

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1,$$

nor by the condition

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

resp.

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ would be.

On Remark 3.11. In what follows, for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin H^+$, resp. for every $(x_0, y_0) \notin H^-$, $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, the functions $p, g, q_0 \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}$ are chosen in such a way that the equalities (5.10) are fulfilled and such that the problem (5.6) with $c = 0$ has a solution u , which is not nonnegative, resp. nonpositive. Consequently, if we define ℓ_0, ℓ_1 , and q by (5.7)–(5.9), then the problem (1.1), (1.5₀) with $\ell = \ell_0 - \ell_1$ has a solution

$$u_0(t) = \begin{cases} u(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ u(b) & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases}$$

which is not nonnegative, resp. nonpositive.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin H^+$, resp. $(x_0, y_0) \notin H^-$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs to one of the following sets:

$$H_1^+ = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y > 1 \right\},$$

$$H_2^+ = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y \leq 1, \frac{y}{1+y} \leq x \right\},$$

resp.

$$H_1^- = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x > 1 \right\},$$

$$H_2^- = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x \leq 1, \frac{x}{1+x} \leq y \right\},$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in H_1^+$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g, q_0 \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_2} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b g(s) ds = 0,$$

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} q_0(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds = x_0(y_0 - 1).$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_1$, $\mu \equiv a$. Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.6) has a solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 - \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 - y_0 + \int_{t_1}^t q_0(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 + (1 - y_0) \int_{t_2}^t p(s) ds + \int_{t_2}^t q_0(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b] \end{cases}$$

with $u(t_1) = 1 - y_0 < 0$.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in H_2^+$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g, q_0 \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds &= \frac{y_0}{1+y_0}, & \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds &= x_0 - \frac{y_0}{1+y_0}, & \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds &= 0, \\ \int_a^{t_2} g(s) ds &= 0, & \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds &= y_0, & \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds &= 0, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} q_0(s) ds &= x_0 - \frac{y_0}{1+y_0}, & \int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\mu \equiv a$,

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_1 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.6) has a solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} -1 - (1+y_0) \int_a^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ -1 - y_0 - \int_{t_1}^t p(s) ds + \int_{t_1}^t q_0(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ -1 - y_0 + \int_{t_2}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b] \end{cases}$$

with $u(a) = -1$.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in H_1^-$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g, q_0 \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_2} p(s) ds &= 0, & \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds &= x_0, & \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds &= y_0, & \int_{t_1}^b g(s) ds &= 0, \\ \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds &= y_0(x_0 - 1), & \int_{t_1}^{t_2} q_0(s) ds &= x_0, & \int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_2$, $\mu \equiv a$. Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.6) has a solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} -1 - (x_0 - 1) \int_a^t g(s) ds + \int_a^t q_0(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ -1 + \int_{t_1}^t q_0(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ x_0 - 1 + \int_{t_2}^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b] \end{cases}$$

with $u(t_2) = x_0 - 1 > 0$.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in H_2^+$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g, q_0 \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = y_0 - \frac{x_0}{1+x_0}, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = \frac{x_0}{1+x_0}, \\ \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds = 0, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} q_0(s) ds = y_0 - \frac{x_0}{1+x_0}, \quad \int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv a$,

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} a & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then (5.10) is satisfied and the problem (5.6) has a solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + \int_a^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 + x_0 - \int_{t_1}^t g(s) ds + \int_{t_1}^t q_0(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 + x_0 - (1 + x_0) \int_{t_2}^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b] \end{cases}$$

with $u(a) = 1$.

We have shown that in Theorem 3.12 and Corollary 4.8 neither one of the strict inequalities in (3.20), (4.12) and (4.13) can be replaced by

the nonstrict one. Furthermore, the nonstrict inequalities in (3.20) and in (4.12), resp. (4.13), cannot be replaced by the inequalities

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_j(1)(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon$$

and

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon, \quad \text{resp.} \quad \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \leq 1 + \varepsilon,$$

no matter how small $\varepsilon > 0$ would be.

Nonlinear Problem

6. Statement of the Problem

In this chapter, we will consider the problem on the existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to the equation

$$u'(t) = F(u)(t) \quad (6.1)$$

satisfying the condition

$$\omega(u) = h(u). \quad (6.2)$$

Here, $F \in \mathcal{K}$, $\omega \in \text{ch}$, resp. $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, and $h \in \mathcal{H}$.

By a solution to (6.1) we understand a function $u \in \widetilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying the equality (6.1) almost everywhere in $[a, +\infty[$. By a solution to the problem (6.1), (6.2) we understand a solution to (6.1) which belongs to the domain of ω and satisfies (6.2).

The particular cases of the condition (6.2) are:

$$u(a) = h(u), \quad (6.3)$$

$$u(+\infty) = h(u), \quad (6.4)$$

$$u(a) - u(+\infty) = h(u). \quad (6.5)$$

The chapter is organized as follows: Main results are presented in Section 8, where sufficient conditions for the existence and uniqueness of a bounded solution to the equation (6.1) satisfying one of the conditions (6.3), (6.4), or (6.5) are established. The proofs of the main results are contained in Section 9. In Section 10 we concretize results of Section 8 for particular cases of the equation (6.1) – for the equation with deviating arguments:

$$u'(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m \left(p_k(t)u(\tau_k(t)) - g_k(t)u(\mu_k(t)) \right) + f(t, u(t), u(\nu_1(t)), \dots, u(\nu_n(t))), \quad (6.1')$$

where $f \in K_{loc}([a, +\infty[\times R^{n+1}; R)$, $p_k, g_k \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, $\tau_k, \mu_k \in \mathcal{M}$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), $\nu_j \in \mathcal{M}$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$), $m, n \in N$. Last section of the chapter – Section 11 – is devoted to the examples verifying the optimality of obtained results.

The general principle of the existence of a bounded solution contained in Section 7 play a crucial role in proving the main results. Namely Lemmas 7.2 and 7.3 (see p. 60 and p. 60) state a bounded solution to (6.1) can be

represented as a uniform limit of a suitable sequence $\{u_b\}_{b>a}$ of solutions to the problem

$$u'(t) = \tilde{F}_b(u)(t), \quad (6.6)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_b(u) = \tilde{h}_b(u) \quad (6.7)$$

(for the definition of \tilde{F}_b , $\tilde{\omega}_b$, and \tilde{h}_b see p. 7).

7. The Principle of Existence of Bounded Solutions

7.1. Main Results.

Theorem 7.1. *Let $\omega \in \text{ch}$, and let there exist $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ such that the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution. Let, moreover, there exist a continuous function $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ such that*

$$|h(v)| \leq c(\|v\|) \text{ for } v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R), \quad (7.1)$$

and let on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |\omega(v)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequalities

$$\left| \int_a^t [F(v)(s) - \ell(v)(s)] ds \right| \leq \left| \int_a^t q(s, \|v\|) ds \right| \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (7.2)$$

$$|F(v)(t) - \ell(v)(t)| \leq \eta(t)\|v\| \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad \|v\| \geq \rho_1 \quad (7.3)$$

be fulfilled, where $q \in K_{loc}([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R)$, $\eta \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, and $\rho_1 > 0$. Assume also, that the functions c and q satisfy

$$\sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t q(s, x) ds \right| : t \geq a \right\} < +\infty \text{ for every } x \in R_+, \quad (7.4)$$

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{1}{x} \left(c(x) + \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^t q(s, x) ds \right| : t \geq a \right\} \right) = 0. \quad (7.5)$$

Then the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at least one bounded solution.

Theorem 7.2. *Let $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, and let there exist $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ such that the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution. Let, moreover, there exist a continuous function $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ such that the inequality (7.1) holds, and let on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |\omega(v)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequalities (7.2) and (7.3) be fulfilled, where $\rho_1 > 0$, $q \in K_{loc}([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R)$, and $\eta \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$. Assume also, that the functions c and q satisfy (7.4) and (7.5). Then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exists a finite limit*

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow +\infty} \int_a^t F(v)(s) ds, \quad (7.6)$$

then the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 7.1. From Theorems 7.1 and 7.2, together with the results from Chapter 1, we immediately get several criteria guaranteeing the existence of a bounded solution to the equation (6.1), resp. to the problem (6.1), (6.2).

Definition 7.1. We will say that an operator $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ belongs to the set $\mathcal{A}(\omega)$, if there exists $r > 0$ such that for any $q^* \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c^* \in R_+$, every function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying the inequalities

$$\omega(u) \operatorname{sgn} u(a) \leq c^*, \quad (7.7)$$

$$[u'(t) - \ell(u)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} u(t) \leq q^*(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (7.8)$$

admits the estimate

$$\|u\| \leq r \left(c^* + \int_a^{+\infty} q^*(s) ds \right). \quad (7.9)$$

Definition 7.2. We will say that an operator $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ belongs to the set $\mathcal{B}(\omega)$, if there exists $r > 0$ such that for any $q^* \in L([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ and $c^* \in R_+$, every function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying the inequalities

$$\omega(u) \operatorname{sgn} u(+\infty) \leq c^*, \quad (7.10)$$

$$[u'(t) - \ell(u)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} u(t) \geq -q^*(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (7.11)$$

admits the estimate (7.9).

Theorem 7.3. Let $\omega \in \text{ch}$, and let there exist a continuous function $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ such that

$$h(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c(\|v\|) \text{ for } v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R). \quad (7.12)$$

Let, moreover, there exist an operator $\ell \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality

$$[F(v)(t) - \ell(v)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} v(t) \leq q(t, \|v\|) \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (7.13)$$

is fulfilled, where $q \in K([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R_+)$. Assume also, that the functions c and q satisfy

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{1}{x} \left(c(x) + \int_a^{+\infty} q(s, x) ds \right) = 0. \quad (7.14)$$

Then the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at least one bounded solution.

Theorem 7.4. Let $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, and let there exist a continuous function $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ such that

$$h(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq c(\|v\|) \text{ for } v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R). \quad (7.15)$$

Let, moreover, there exist an operator $\ell \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality

$$[F(v)(t) - \ell(v)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} v(t) \geq -q(t, \|v\|) \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (7.16)$$

is fulfilled, where $q \in K([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R_+)$. Assume also, that the functions c and q satisfy (7.14). Then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exists a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at least one bounded solution.

Theorem 7.5. Let $\omega \in \text{ch}$, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$,

$$[h(v) - h(w)] \text{sgn}(v(a) - w(a)) \leq 0 \text{ for } v, w \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R), \quad (7.17)$$

and let there exist $\ell \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \text{sgn } v(a) \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality

$$[F(v)(t) - F(w)(t) - \ell(v - w)(t)] \text{sgn}(v(t) - w(t)) \leq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (7.18)$$

is fulfilled. Then the problem (6.1), (6.2) has a unique bounded solution.

Theorem 7.6. Let $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$,

$$[h(v) - h(w)] \text{sgn}(v(+\infty) - w(+\infty)) \leq 0 \text{ for } v, w \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R), \quad (7.19)$$

and let there exist $\ell \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \text{sgn } v(+\infty) \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality

$$[F(v)(t) - F(w)(t) - \ell(v - w)(t)] \text{sgn}(v(t) - w(t)) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (7.20)$$

is fulfilled. Let, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6). Then the problem (6.1), (6.2) has a unique bounded solution.

7.2. Auxiliary Propositions. To prove Theorems 7.1–7.6 we will need some auxiliary propositions established in this subsection.

In what follows, we will also consider on the interval $[a, b]$ the problem

$$v'(t) = \hat{F}(v)(t), \quad (7.21)$$

$$\hat{\omega}(v) = \hat{h}(v), \quad (7.22)$$

where $\hat{F} \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$, $\hat{\omega} : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow R$ is a linear bounded functional, and $\hat{h} : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow R$ is a continuous functional satisfying that for every $r > 0$ there exists $M_r > 0$ such that

$$|\hat{h}(v)| \leq M_r \text{ for } \|v\|_C \leq r.$$

By a solution to the problem (7.21), (7.22) we understand a function $v \in \tilde{C}([a, b]; R)$, which satisfies the equality (7.21) almost everywhere in $[a, b]$ and the condition (7.22) is fulfilled.

Now let us formulate the result from [16, Theorem 1] in a suitable form for us.

Lemma 7.1. Let there exist a positive number ρ and an operator $\hat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ such that the homogeneous problem

$$v'(t) = \hat{\ell}(v)(t), \quad \hat{\omega}(v) = 0 \quad (7.23)$$

has only a trivial solution, and let for every $\delta \in]0, 1[$ and for an arbitrary function $v \in \tilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) + \delta[\widehat{F}(v)(t) - \widehat{\ell}(v)(t)] \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (7.24)$$

$$\widehat{\omega}(v) = \delta\widehat{h}(v), \quad (7.25)$$

the estimate

$$\|v\|_C \leq \rho \quad (7.26)$$

hold. Then the problem (7.21), (7.22) has at least one solution v , which satisfies (7.26).

Proof. Since $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ and $\widehat{F} \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$, there exist $\eta, \eta_0 \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $\alpha \in R_+$ such that

$$|\widehat{\ell}(y)(t)| \leq \eta(t)\|y\|_C \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad y \in C([a, b]; R),$$

$$|\widehat{F}(y)(t)| \leq \eta_0(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad \|y\|_C \leq 2\rho,$$

$$|\widehat{h}(y)| \leq \alpha \text{ for } \|y\|_C \leq 2\rho.$$

Put

$$\gamma(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \eta_0(t) + 2\rho\eta(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b],$$

$$\sigma(s) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \begin{cases} 1 & \text{for } 0 \leq s \leq \rho, \\ 2 - \frac{s}{\rho} & \text{for } \rho < s < 2\rho, \\ 0 & \text{for } 2\rho \leq s, \end{cases} \quad (7.27)$$

$$q_0(y)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sigma(\|y\|_C)[\widehat{F}(y)(t) - \widehat{\ell}(y)(t)] \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (7.28)$$

$$c_0(y) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \sigma(\|y\|_C)\widehat{h}(y).$$

Then for every $y \in C([a, b]; R)$ and almost all $t \in [a, b]$, the inequalities

$$|q_0(y)(t)| \leq \gamma(t), \quad |c_0(y)| \leq \alpha$$

hold.

For arbitrarily fixed $u \in C([a, b]; R)$, let us consider the problem

$$v'(t) = \widehat{\ell}(v)(t) + q_0(u)(t), \quad \widehat{\omega}(v) = c_0(u). \quad (7.29)$$

According to Proposition 1.3 (see p. 11), the problem (7.29) has a unique solution v and, moreover, by virtue of Proposition 2.1 (see p. 13), there exists $\beta > 0$ such that

$$\|v\|_C \leq \beta(|c_0(u)| + \|q_0(u)\|_L).$$

Therefore, for arbitrarily fixed $u \in C([a, b]; R)$, the solution v to the problem (7.29) admits the estimates

$$\|v\|_C \leq \rho_0, \quad |v'(t)| \leq \gamma^*(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (7.30)$$

where $\rho_0 = \beta(\|\gamma\|_L + \alpha)$ and $\gamma^*(t) = \rho_0\eta(t) + \gamma(t)$ for $t \in [a, b]$.

Let $\Omega : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow C([a, b]; R)$ be an operator which to every $u \in C([a, b]; R)$ assigns the solution v to the problem (7.29). Due to Theorem 1.4 from [15], the operator Ω is continuous (see also [10, Theorem 3.2]). On the other hand, by virtue of (7.30), for every $u \in C([a, b]; R)$ we have

$$\|\Omega(u)\|_C \leq \rho_0, \quad |\Omega(u)(t) - \Omega(u)(s)| \leq \left| \int_s^t \gamma^*(\xi) d\xi \right| \text{ for } s, t \in [a, b].$$

Thus the operator Ω continuously maps the Banach space $C([a, b]; R)$ into its relatively compact subset. Therefore, using the Schauder's principle, there exists $u \in C([a, b]; R)$ such that

$$\Omega(u)(t) = u(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b].$$

By the equalities (7.28), u is obviously a solution to the problem (7.24), (7.25) with

$$\delta = \sigma(\|u\|_C). \quad (7.31)$$

Now we will show that u admits the estimate (7.26). Suppose the contrary. Then either

$$\rho < \|u\|_C < 2\rho \quad (7.32)$$

or

$$\|u\|_C \geq 2\rho. \quad (7.33)$$

If we assume that the inequalities (7.32) are fulfilled, then, on account of (7.27) and (7.31), we have $\delta \in]0, 1[$. However, by the assumptions of the lemma, in this case we have the estimate (7.26), which contradicts (7.32).

Suppose now that (7.33) is satisfied. Then by (7.27) and (7.31), we have $\delta = 0$. Hence u is a solution to the problem (7.23). But this is impossible because the problem (7.23) has only a trivial solution. Thus, above-obtained contradiction proves the validity of the estimate (7.26).

By virtue of (7.26), (7.27), and (7.31), it is clear that $\delta = 1$ and thus, u is a solution to the problem (7.21), (7.22). \square

From Lemma 7.1 it immediately follows

Proposition 7.1. *Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$, and let there exist $\rho > 0$ and an operator $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ such that the homogeneous problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution, and let for every $\delta \in]0, 1[$ and for an arbitrary function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying*

$$u'(t) = \tilde{\ell}_b(u)(t) + \delta[\tilde{F}_b(u)(t) - \tilde{\ell}_b(u)(t)] \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (7.34)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_b(u) = \delta \tilde{h}_b(u), \quad (7.35)$$

the estimate

$$\|u\| \leq \rho \quad (7.36)$$

hold. Then the problem (6.6), (6.7) has at least one solution u , which satisfies (7.36).

Lemma 7.2. *Let there exist $\rho > 0$ and $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, the equation (6.6) has a solution u_b satisfying*

$$\|u_b\| \leq \rho. \quad (7.37)$$

Then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution u . Moreover, there exists a sequence $\{u_{b_n}\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \{u_b\}_{b \geq b_0}$ such that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} u_{b_n}(t) = u_0(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (7.38)$$

Proof. Since $F \in \mathcal{K}$, there exists $q \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$ such that

$$|F(v)(t)| \leq q(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R), \quad \|v\| \leq \rho.$$

Therefore, since $\theta_b(u_b)(t) = u_b(t)$ for $t \geq a$, in view of (6.6) we have

$$\begin{aligned} |u_b(t) - u_b(s)| &\leq \int_s^t |\tilde{F}_b(u_b)(\xi)| d\xi \leq \\ &\leq \int_s^t |F(u_b)(\xi)| d\xi \leq \int_s^t q(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t. \end{aligned}$$

Consequently, the set of functions $\{u_b\}_{b \geq b_0}$ is uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$. According to Arzelà–Ascoli lemma, there exist a sequence $\{u_{b_n}\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \{u_b\}_{b \geq b_0}$ and a function $u \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that $\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} b_n = +\infty$ and (7.38) is fulfilled.

Obviously,

$$\theta_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(t) = u_{b_n}(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N,$$

and from (7.37) it follows that $\|u\| \leq \rho$. Moreover, the integration of (6.6) from a to t (with $u = u_{b_n}$) yields

$$u_{b_n}(t) = u_{b_n}(a) + \int_a^t F(u_{b_n})(s) ds \text{ for } t \in [a, b_n], \quad n \in N.$$

Consequently, with respect to (7.38) and the assumption $F \in \mathcal{K}$ we have

$$u(t) = u(a) + \int_a^t F(u)(s) ds \text{ for } t \geq a,$$

i.e., $u \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and it is a bounded solution to the equation (6.1). \square

Lemma 7.3. *Let $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ and let the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) be a trivial solution. Let, moreover, there exist a continuous function $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ such that the inequality (7.1) holds, and let on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |\omega(v)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequalities (7.2) and (7.3) be fulfilled, where $q \in K_{loc}([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R)$, $\eta \in L_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R_+)$, and $\rho_1 > 0$. Assume also, that the functions c and q satisfy (7.4) and*

(7.5). Then there exist $\rho > 0$ and $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, an arbitrary function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying (7.34) and (7.35) with some $\delta \in]0, 1[$, admits the estimate (7.36).

Proof. By virtue of Proposition 2.3 (see p. 14) there exists $b_* \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_*$ the problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution. We will show that there exist $\rho > 0$ and $b_0 \geq b_*$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, an arbitrary function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying (7.34) and (7.35) with some $\delta \in]0, 1[$, admits the estimate (7.36).

Assume on the contrary that for every $n \in N$ there exist $b_n \geq b_*$, $\delta_n \in]0, 1[$, and $u_{b_n} \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying (7.34) and (7.35) with $b = b_n$ and $\delta = \delta_n$, such that $\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} b_n = +\infty$ and

$$\|u_{b_n}\| > n.$$

Obviously,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} \|u_{b_n}\| = +\infty. \quad (7.39)$$

Put

$$v_n(t) = \frac{u_{b_n}(t)}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N. \quad (7.40)$$

Then

$$\|v_n\| = 1 \text{ for } n \in N \quad (7.41)$$

and, in view of (7.34), (7.35), and (7.40), we have

$$v'_n(t) = \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(v_n)(t) + \frac{\delta_n}{\|u_{b_n}\|} [\tilde{F}_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(t) - \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(t)] \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (7.42)$$

$$\tilde{\omega}_{b_n}(v_n) = \frac{\delta_n}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \tilde{h}_{b_n}(u_{b_n}). \quad (7.43)$$

Obviously, $\theta_{b_n}(v_n) \equiv v_n$ and $\theta_{b_n}(u_{b_n}) \equiv u_{b_n}$. Therefore, on account of (7.3), (7.39), (7.41), and the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, from (7.42) it follows that there exists $n_0 \in N$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} |v_n(t) - v_n(s)| &\leq \int_s^t |v'_n(\xi)| d\xi \leq \\ &\leq \int_s^t \tilde{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi + \int_s^t \eta(\xi) d\xi \text{ for } a \leq s \leq t, \quad n \geq n_0. \end{aligned} \quad (7.44)$$

Therefore, the sequence $\{v_n\}_{n=n_0}^{+\infty}$ is uniformly bounded and equicontinuous on every compact subinterval of $[a, +\infty[$. According to Arzelà–Ascoli lemma we can assume, without loss of generality, that there exists $v_0 \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} v_n(t) = v_0(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (7.45)$$

Moreover, on account of (7.41), we have

$$\|v_0\| \leq 1, \quad (7.46)$$

and the integration of (7.42) from a to t yields

$$\begin{aligned} v_n(t) &= v_n(a) + \int_a^t \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(v_n)(s) ds + \\ &+ \frac{\delta_n}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \int_a^t [\tilde{F}_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(s) - \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(s)] ds \quad \text{for } n \in N. \end{aligned} \quad (7.47)$$

On the other hand, by virtue of (7.1) and (7.2) we have

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\delta_n}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \left| \int_a^t [\tilde{F}_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(s) - \tilde{\ell}_{b_n}(u_{b_n})(s)] ds \right| &\leq \\ &\leq \frac{1}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^\xi q(s, \|u_{b_n}\|) ds \right| : \xi \geq a \right\} \quad \text{for } t \geq a, \end{aligned} \quad (7.48)$$

$$\frac{\delta_n}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \tilde{h}_{b_n}(u_{b_n}) \leq \frac{1}{\|u_{b_n}\|} c(\|u_{b_n}\|). \quad (7.49)$$

Now, from (7.47), in view of (7.5), (7.39), (7.45), and (7.48), we get

$$v_0(t) = v_0(a) + \int_a^t \ell(v_0)(s) ds \quad \text{for } t \geq a. \quad (7.50)$$

Thus $v_0 \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ and

$$|v_0(t) - v_0(s)| = \left| \int_s^t \ell(v_0)(\xi) d\xi \right| \leq \|v_0\| \int_s^t \bar{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi \quad \text{for } a \leq s \leq t.$$

The last inequality, together with (7.46) and the fact that $\bar{\ell} \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$, ensures that there exists a finite limit $v_0(+\infty)$. Consequently, from (7.43), in view of (7.5), (7.39), (7.45), and (7.49) we also obtain

$$\omega(v_0) = 0. \quad (7.51)$$

Now (7.46), (7.50), and (7.51) imply that v_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀). Therefore,

$$v_0 \equiv 0. \quad (7.52)$$

Since $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, we can choose $a_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that

$$\int_{a_0}^{+\infty} \bar{\ell}(1)(s) ds \leq \frac{1}{5}. \quad (7.53)$$

According to (7.5), (7.39), (7.45), and (7.52) there exists $n_1 \in N$ such that

$$|v_n(t)| \leq \frac{1}{5} \text{ for } t \in [a, a_0], \quad n \geq n_1, \quad (7.54)$$

$$\frac{1}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^\xi q(s, \|u_{b_n}\|) ds \right| : \xi \geq a \right\} \leq \frac{1}{5} \text{ for } n \geq n_1. \quad (7.55)$$

On the other hand, from (7.47), in view of (7.41) and (7.48), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & |v_n(t) - v_n(a_0)| \leq \\ & \leq \int_{a_0}^{+\infty} \bar{\ell}(1)(s) ds + \frac{2}{\|u_{b_n}\|} \sup \left\{ \left| \int_a^\xi q(s, \|u_{b_n}\|) ds \right| : \xi \geq a \right\} \text{ for } t \geq a_0. \end{aligned}$$

Hence, on account of (7.53)–(7.55), we obtain

$$|v_n(t)| \leq \frac{4}{5} \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \geq n_1$$

which contradicts (7.41). \square

Lemma 7.4. *Let $\omega \in \text{ch}$, $c \in R_+$, and let $v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ be a function satisfying*

$$\omega(v) \text{sgn } v(a) \leq c.$$

Then there exists a sequence of functions $\{v_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that

$$\omega(v_n) \text{sgn } v_n(a) \leq c \text{ for } n \in N \quad (7.56)$$

and

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} v_n(t) = v(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (7.57)$$

Proof. Let $\{b_k\}_{k=1}^{+\infty}$ be a sequence of numbers such that $b_k \geq a$ for $k \in N$, $\lim_{k \rightarrow +\infty} b_k = +\infty$. If for every $n \in N$ there exists $k_n \in N$ such that $k_n \geq n$ and

$$\omega(\theta_{b_{k_n}}(v)) \text{sgn } \theta_{b_{k_n}}(v)(a) \leq c,$$

then we put

$$v_n(t) = \theta_{b_{k_n}}(v)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N.$$

If there exists $k_0 \in N$ such that

$$\omega(\theta_{b_k}(v)) \text{sgn } \theta_{b_k}(v)(a) > c \text{ for } k \geq k_0,$$

then for every $n \in N$ there exists $k_n \geq k_0$ such that

$$\omega(\theta_{b_{k_n}}(v)) \text{sgn } \theta_{b_{k_n}}(v)(a) - \frac{1}{n} \leq c,$$

because

$$\lim_{k \rightarrow +\infty} \omega(\theta_{b_k}(v)) \text{sgn } \theta_{b_k}(v)(a) = \omega(v) \text{sgn } v(a) \leq c.$$

Put

$$\tilde{v}_n(t) = \theta_{b_{k_n}}(v)(t) - \frac{\theta_{b_{k_0}}(v)(t)}{n\omega(\theta_{b_{k_0}}(v)) \operatorname{sgn} \theta_{b_{k_0}}(v)(a)} \quad \text{for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N.$$

Obviously, there exists $n_0 \in N$ such that

$$\operatorname{sgn} \tilde{v}_n(a) = \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \quad \text{for } n \geq n_0.$$

Thus we can put

$$v_n(t) = \tilde{v}_{n+n_0}(t) \quad \text{for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N.$$

Consequently, in both cases we have that (7.56) and (7.57) hold. \square

Lemma 7.5. *Let $\omega \in \operatorname{ch}$, $c \in R_+$, and let there exist $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c\}$ the inequality (7.18) is fulfilled. Then on the set $\{v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c\}$ the inequality (7.18) holds, as well.*

Proof. Assume on the contrary that there exist $v_0, w_0 \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfying $\omega(v_0) \operatorname{sgn} v_0(a) \leq c$ and $\omega(w_0) \operatorname{sgn} w_0(a) \leq c$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} & [F(v_0)(t) - F(w_0)(t) - \ell(v_0 - w_0)(t)] \times \\ & \quad \times \operatorname{sgn}(v_0(t) - w_0(t)) > 0 \quad \text{for } t \in M, \end{aligned} \quad (7.58)$$

where $M \subseteq [a, +\infty[$ is a measurable set with $\operatorname{meas} M > 0$. According to Lemma 7.4 there exist sequences of functions $\{v_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty}, \{w_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that

$$\omega(v_n) \operatorname{sgn} v_n(a) \leq c, \quad \omega(w_n) \operatorname{sgn} w_n(a) \leq c \quad \text{for } n \in N, \quad (7.59)$$

and $\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} v_n(t) = v_0(t), \lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} w_n(t) = w_0(t)$ uniformly in $[a, +\infty[$. Put

$$M_n = [a, a+n] \cap M \quad \text{for } n \in N, \quad (7.60)$$

$$\begin{aligned} q_n(t) = & [F(v_n)(t) - F(w_n)(t) - \ell(v_n - w_n)(t)] \times \\ & \quad \times \operatorname{sgn}(v_n(t) - w_n(t)) \quad \text{for } t \geq a, \quad n \in N, \end{aligned} \quad (7.61)$$

$$\begin{aligned} q_0(t) = & [F(v_0)(t) - F(w_0)(t) - \ell(v_0 - w_0)(t)] \times \\ & \quad \times \operatorname{sgn}(v_0(t) - w_0(t)) \quad \text{for } t \geq a. \end{aligned} \quad (7.62)$$

Obviously, there exists $n_0 \in N$ such that

$$\operatorname{meas} M_{n_0} > 0. \quad (7.63)$$

Furthermore, let

$$K_n = \left\{ t \in M_{n_0} : |v_0(t) - w_0(t)| \geq \frac{1}{n} \right\} \quad \text{for } n \in N.$$

Then, in view of (7.58), (7.60), and (7.63), there exists $n_1 \in N$ such that

$$\operatorname{meas} K_{n_1} > 0.$$

Put

$$\varepsilon \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} \int_{K_{n_1}} q_0(s) ds. \quad (7.64)$$

Obviously, $\varepsilon > 0$ and there exists $n_2 \in N$ such that

$$\text{sgn}(v_n(t) - w_n(t)) = \text{sgn}(v_0(t) - w_0(t)) \text{ for } t \in K_{n_1}, \quad n \geq n_2.$$

Since $F \in \mathcal{K}$ and $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, there exists $n_3 \geq n_2$ such that

$$\int_{K_{n_1}} |q_n(s) - q_0(s)| ds < \varepsilon \text{ for } n \geq n_3, \quad (7.65)$$

where ε is defined by (7.64). Moreover, because we assume that (7.18) is fulfilled on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \text{sgn } v(a) \leq c\}$, in view of (7.59) and (7.61) we get

$$\int_{K_{n_1}} q_n(s) ds \leq 0 \text{ for } n \in N. \quad (7.66)$$

On the other hand, on account of (7.65) and (7.66), we have

$$\int_{K_{n_1}} q_0(s) ds \leq \int_{K_{n_1}} q_{n_1}(s) ds + \int_{K_{n_1}} |q_0(s) - q_{n_1}(s)| ds < \varepsilon,$$

which contradicts (7.64). \square

7.3. Proofs of Theorems 7.1–7.6. *Proof of Theorem 7.1.* According to Lemmas 7.2 and 7.3, and Propositions 2.3 and 7.1, there exist a bounded solution u_0 to the equation (6.1) and a sequence of functions $\{u_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that

$$\omega(u_n) = h(u_n) \text{ for } n \in N, \quad (7.67)$$

and

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow +\infty} u_n(t) = u_0(t) \text{ uniformly in } [a, +\infty[. \quad (7.68)$$

Hence, in view of the fact that ω and h are continuous functionals on $C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, we get $\omega(u_0) = h(u_0)$, i.e., u_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (6.1), (6.2). \square

Proof of Theorem 7.2. According to Lemmas 7.2 and 7.3, and Propositions 2.3 and 7.1, there exist a bounded solution u_0 to the equation (6.1) and a sequence of functions $\{u_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that (7.67) and (7.68) hold. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (7.6) for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, then there exists a finite limit $u(+\infty)$, i.e., $u_0 \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$. Hence, in view of the fact that ω and h are continuous functionals on $C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, we get $\omega(u_0) = h(u_0)$, i.e., u_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (6.1), (6.2). \square

Proof of Theorem 7.3. First note that due to the assumption $\ell \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$, the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution. Therefore, according to Proposition 2.3 (see p. 14), there exists $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, the problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution.

Let r be the number appearing in Definition 7.1. According to (7.14), there exists $\rho > 0$ such that

$$\frac{1}{x} \left(c(x) + \int_a^{+\infty} q(s, x) ds \right) < \frac{1}{r} \text{ for } x > \rho. \quad (7.69)$$

Let now $b \geq b_0$ be arbitrary but fixed and assume that a function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfies (7.34) and (7.35) with some $\delta \in]0, 1[$. Then, obviously, $\theta_b(u) \equiv u$, and, according to (7.12), u satisfies the inequality (7.7) with $c^* = c(\|u\|)$, i.e., $u \in \{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$. By virtue of (7.13) we have that u satisfies also the inequality (7.8) with $q^*(t) = q(t, \|u\|)$ for $t \geq a$. Hence, by the assumption $\ell \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ and the definition of the number ρ we get the estimate (7.36).

Since ρ depends neither on u nor on δ , it follows from Proposition 7.1 that the problem (6.6), (6.7) has at least one solution u . Obviously, this solution admits the estimate (7.36). Furthermore, since $b \geq b_0$ was chosen arbitrarily, according to Lemma 7.2, the equation (6.1) has a bounded solution u_0 , and there exist a sequence of functions $\{u_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that (7.67) and (7.68) hold. Hence, since ω and h are continuous functionals on $C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, we get $\omega(u_0) = h(u_0)$. Therefore, u_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (6.1), (6.2). \square

Proof of Theorem 7.4. First note that due to the assumption $\ell \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$, the only bounded solution to the problem (1.1₀), (1.2₀) is a trivial solution. Therefore, according to Proposition 2.3 (see p. 14), there exists $b_0 \in]a, +\infty[$ such that for every $b \geq b_0$, the problem (1.18₀), (1.19₀) has only a trivial solution.

Let r be the number appearing in Definition 7.2. According to (7.14), there exists $\rho > 0$ such that (7.69) holds. Let now $b \geq b_0$ be arbitrary but fixed and assume that a function $u \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ satisfies (7.34) and (7.35) with some $\delta \in]0, 1[$. Then, obviously, $\theta_b(u) \equiv u$, and, according to (7.15), u satisfies the inequality (7.10) with $c^* = c(\|u\|)$, i.e., $u \in \{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$. By virtue of (7.16) we have that u satisfies also the inequality (7.11) with $q^*(t) = q(t, \|u\|)$ for $t \geq a$. Hence, by the assumption $\ell \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$ and the definition of the number ρ we get the estimate (7.36).

Since ρ depends neither on u nor on δ , it follows from Proposition 7.1 that the problem (6.6), (6.7) has at least one solution u . Obviously, this solution admits the estimate (7.36). Furthermore, since $b \geq b_0$ was chosen

arbitrarily, according to Lemma 7.2, the equation (6.1) has a bounded solution u_0 , and there exist a sequence of functions $\{u_n\}_{n=1}^{+\infty} \subset \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ such that (7.67) and (7.68) hold. If, moreover, there exists a finite limit (7.6) for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, then there exists a finite limit $u(+\infty)$, i.e., $u_0 \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$. Hence, since ω and h are continuous functionals on $C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, we get $\omega(u_0) = h(u_0)$. Therefore, u_0 is a bounded solution to the problem (6.1), (6.2). \square

Proof of Theorem 7.5. It follows from (7.17) that the condition (7.12) is fulfilled with $c \equiv |h(0)|$. By virtue of (7.18) we see that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality (7.13) holds, where $q \equiv |F(0)|$. Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 7.3 are fulfilled and so the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at least one bounded solution. It remains to show that the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at most one bounded solution.

Let u_1, u_2 be bounded solutions to the problem (6.1), (6.2), and let $b \in]a, +\infty[$ be arbitrary but fixed. Since $\theta_b(u_i) \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ ($i = 1, 2$), on account of (7.17) we get

$$\begin{aligned} [h(\theta_b(u_1)) - h(\theta_b(u_2))] \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(a) - u_2(a)) &\leq 0, \\ h(\theta_b(u_i)) \operatorname{sgn} u_i(a) &\leq |h(0)| \quad \text{for } i = 1, 2. \end{aligned}$$

Consequently, in view of (6.2), we have

$$\begin{aligned} \omega(u_i) \operatorname{sgn} u_i(a) &= h(u_i) \operatorname{sgn} u_i(a) = \\ &= \lim_{b \rightarrow +\infty} h(\theta_b(u_i)) \operatorname{sgn} u_i(a) \leq |h(0)| \quad \text{for } i = 1, 2, \\ [h(u_1) - h(u_2)] \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(a) - u_2(a)) &\leq 0. \end{aligned} \quad (7.70)$$

Thus, according to Lemma 7.5 and (7.18), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} [F(u_1)(t) - F(u_2)(t) - \ell(u_1 - u_2)(t)] \times \\ \times \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(t) - u_2(t)) &\leq 0 \quad \text{for } t \geq a. \end{aligned} \quad (7.71)$$

Therefore, from (6.1) and (6.2), on account of (7.70) and (7.71) we obtain

$$\omega(u_1 - u_2) \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(a) - u_2(a)) \leq 0, \quad (7.72)$$

$$[u_1'(t) - u_2'(t) - \ell(u_1 - u_2)(t)] \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(t) - u_2(t)) \leq 0 \quad \text{for } t \geq a. \quad (7.73)$$

Furthermore, from (7.73) it follows that

$$|u_1(t) - u_2(t)|' \leq |\ell(u_1 - u_2)(t)| \quad \text{for } t \geq a,$$

whence, on account of the assumption $\ell \in \tilde{\mathcal{L}}$, we get

$$\| |w(t)| - |w(s)| \| \leq \|w\| \int_s^t \bar{\ell}(1)(\xi) d\xi \quad \text{for } a \leq s \leq t,$$

where $w(t) = u_1(t) - u_2(t)$ for $t \geq a$. Consequently, $w \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$, and by virtue of (7.72), (7.73), and the assumption $\ell \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$, we have $\|w\| = 0$, i.e., $u_1 \equiv u_2$. \square

Proof of Theorem 7.6. It follows from (7.19) that the condition (7.15) is fulfilled with $c \equiv |h(0)|$. By virtue of (7.20) we see that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : \omega(v) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality (7.16) holds, where $q \equiv |F(0)|$. Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 7.4 are fulfilled and so the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at least one bounded solution. It remains to show that the problem (6.1), (6.2) has at most one bounded solution.

Let u_1, u_2 be bounded solutions to the problem (6.1), (6.2). Then, obviously, $u_1, u_2 \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$. Consequently, by virtue of (7.19) and (7.20), we have

$$\omega(u_1 - u_2) \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(+\infty) - u_2(+\infty)) \leq 0, \quad (7.74)$$

$$[u_1'(t) - u_2'(t) - \ell(u_1 - u_2)(t)] \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(t) - u_2(t)) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a. \quad (7.75)$$

Now, since $u_1 - u_2 \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[; R)$ and $\ell \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$, by virtue of (7.74) and (7.75) we obtain $\|u_1 - u_2\| = 0$, i.e., $u_1 \equiv u_2$. \square

8. Existence and Uniqueness of Bounded Solutions

In what follows, we will always assume that $q \in K([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R_+)$, $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ is a continuous function, and

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{1}{x} \left(c(x) + \int_a^{+\infty} q(s, x) ds \right) = 0.$$

Theorem 8.1. *Let the inequality (7.12) hold, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(a)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality*

$$[F(v)(t) - \ell_0(v)(t) + \ell_1(v)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} v(t) \leq q(t, \|v\|) \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (8.1)$$

is fulfilled. If, moreover, there exists $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying

$$\gamma'(t) \geq \ell_0(\gamma)(t) + \ell_1(1)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (8.2)$$

$$\gamma(+\infty) - \gamma(a) < 2, \quad (8.3)$$

then the problem (6.1), (6.3) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 8.1. Theorem 8.1 is unimprovable in the sense that the inequality (8.3) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.1, p. 89).

Theorem 8.2. *Let the inequality (7.12) hold, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(a)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality*

(8.1) is fulfilled. If, moreover,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (8.4)$$

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds}, \quad (8.5)$$

then the problem (6.1), (6.3) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 8.2. Denote by D_a the set of pairs $(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times \mathbb{R}_+$ such that

$$x < 1, \quad y < 2\sqrt{1-x}$$

(see Figure 8.1).

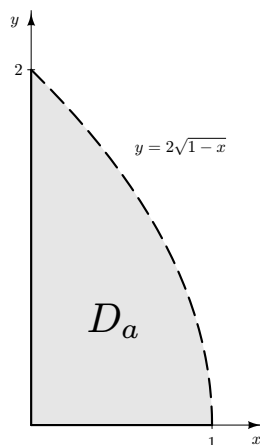


Figure 8.1

According to Theorem 8.2, if (7.12) holds, there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that the inequality (8.1) is satisfied on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; \mathbb{R}) : |v(a)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in D_a,$$

then the problem (6.1), (6.3) has at least one bounded solution. Below we will show (see On Remark 8.2, p. 90) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in \mathbb{R}_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_a$ there exist $F \in \mathcal{K}$ and $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that (7.12) (with $h \equiv 0$) and (8.1) hold,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (6.1), (6.3) (with $h \equiv 0$) has no solution. In particular, the strict inequalities (8.4) and (8.5) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

Theorem 8.3. *Let the inequality (7.15) hold, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(+\infty)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality*

$$[F(v)(t) - \ell_0(v)(t) + \ell_1(v)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} v(t) \geq -q(t, \|v\|) \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (8.6)$$

is fulfilled. If, moreover, there exists $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying

$$-\gamma'(t) \geq \ell_1(\gamma)(t) + \ell_0(1)(t) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (8.7)$$

$$\gamma(+\infty) > 0, \quad (8.8)$$

$$\gamma(a) - \gamma(+\infty) < 2, \quad (8.9)$$

then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.4) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 8.3. The Example 5.2 (see p. 41) shows that the condition (8.8) is essential and it cannot be omitted even in the linear case. Furthermore, Theorem 8.1 is unimprovable in the sense that the inequality (8.9) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.3, p. 92).

Theorem 8.4. *Let the inequality (7.15) hold, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(+\infty)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality (8.6) is fulfilled. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (8.10)$$

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds}, \quad (8.11)$$

then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.4) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 8.4. Denote by $D_{+\infty}$ the set of pairs $(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+$ such that

$$y < 1, \quad x < 2\sqrt{1-y}$$

(see Figure 8.2).

According to Theorem 8.4, if (7.15) holds, there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that the inequality (8.6) is satisfied on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(+\infty)| \leq c(\|v\|)\}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in D_{+\infty},$$

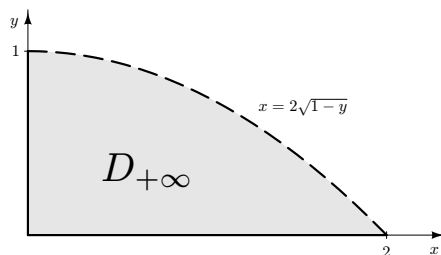


Figure 8.2

and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.4) has at least one bounded solution. Below we will show (see On Remark 8.4, p. 93) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_{+\infty}$, there exist $F \in \mathcal{K}$ and $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that (7.15) (with $h \equiv 0$) and (8.6) hold,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (6.1), (6.4) (with $h \equiv 0$) has no solution. In particular, the strict inequalities (8.10) and (8.11) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

Theorem 8.5. *Let the inequality (7.12) hold, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : (v(a) - v(+\infty)) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$ the inequality (8.1) is fulfilled. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (8.12)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds}, \quad (8.13)$$

then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.5) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 8.5. Denote by D_p^+ the set of pairs $(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+$ such that

$$x < 1, \quad \frac{x}{1-x} < y < 2\sqrt{1-x}$$

(see Figure 8.3).

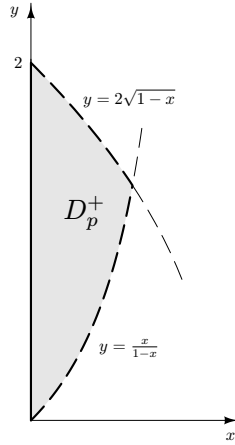


Figure 8.3

According to Theorem 8.5, if (7.12) holds, there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that the inequality (8.1) is satisfied on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : (v(a) - v(+\infty)) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in D_p^+,$$

and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.5) has at least one bounded solution. Below we will show (see On Remark 8.5, p. 94) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_p^+$ there exist $F \in \mathcal{K}$ and $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that (7.12) (with $h \equiv 0$) and (8.1) hold,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (6.1), (6.5) (with $h \equiv 0$) has no solution. In particular, the strict inequalities (8.12) and (8.13) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

Theorem 8.6. *Let the inequality (7.15) hold, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : (v(a) - v(+\infty)) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq$*

$c(\|v\|)$ the inequality (8.6) is fulfilled. If, moreover,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (8.14)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds}, \quad (8.15)$$

then the equation (6.1) has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.5) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 8.6. Denote by D_p^- the set of pairs $(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+$ such that

$$y < 1, \quad \frac{y}{1-y} < x < 2\sqrt{1-y}$$

(see Figure 8.4).

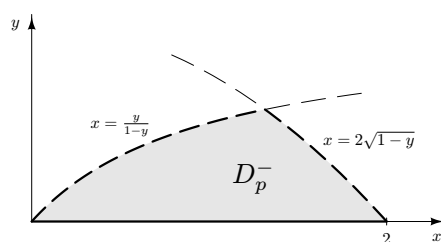


Figure 8.4.

According to Theorem 8.6, if (7.15) holds, there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that the inequality (8.6) is satisfied on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : (v(a) - v(+\infty)) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq c(\|v\|)\}$, and

$$\left(\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds, \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds \right) \in D_p^-,$$

and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exist a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.5) has at least one bounded solution. Below we will show (see On Remark 8.6, p. 97) that for every $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$, $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_p^-$, there exist $F \in \mathcal{K}$ and $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that (7.15) (with $h \equiv 0$) and (8.6) hold,

$$\int_a^{+\infty} \ell_0(1)(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} \ell_1(1)(s) ds = y_0,$$

and the problem (6.1), (6.5) (with $h \equiv 0$) has no solution. In particular, the strict inequalities (8.14) and (8.15) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

In Theorems 8.7–8.12, the conditions guaranteeing the existence of a unique bounded solution to the problems (6.1), (6.k) ($k = 3, 4, 5$) are established.

Theorem 8.7. *Let the inequality (7.17) hold, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(a)| \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality*

$$\begin{aligned} & [F(v)(t) - F(w)(t) - \ell_0(v - w)(t) + \ell_1(v - w)(t)] \times \\ & \quad \times \operatorname{sgn}(v(t) - w(t)) \leq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a \end{aligned} \quad (8.16)$$

is fulfilled. If, moreover, there exists $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying (8.2) and (8.3), then the problem (6.1), (6.3) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 8.7. The example constructed in Section 11 (see On Remark 8.1, p. 89) also shows that the strict inequality (8.3) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one.

Theorem 8.8. *Let the inequality (7.17) hold, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(a)| \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality (8.16) is fulfilled. If, moreover, the inequalities (8.4) and (8.5) hold, then the problem (6.1), (6.3) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 8.8. Examples constructed in Section 11 (see On Remark 8.2, p. 90) also show that neither one of the strict inequalities (8.4) and (8.5) can be replaced by the nonstrict one.

Theorem 8.9. *Let (7.19) hold, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(+\infty)| \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality*

$$\begin{aligned} & [F(v)(t) - F(w)(t) - \ell_0(v - w)(t) + \ell_1(v - w)(t)] \times \\ & \quad \times \operatorname{sgn}(v(t) - w(t)) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a \end{aligned} \quad (8.17)$$

is fulfilled. If, moreover, there exists $\gamma \in \tilde{C}_0([a, +\infty[;]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying (8.7)–(8.9), and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exists a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.4) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 8.9. The Example 5.2 (see p. 41) shows that the condition (8.8) is essential and it cannot be omitted even in the linear case. Furthermore, the example constructed in Section 11 (see On Remark 8.3, p. 92) also shows that the strict inequality (8.9) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one.

Theorem 8.10. *Let the inequality (7.19) hold, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : |v(+\infty)| \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality (8.17) is fulfilled. If, moreover, the inequalities (8.10) and (8.11) hold, and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exists a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.4) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 8.10. The examples constructed in Section 11 (see On Remark 8.4, p. 93) also show that neither one of the strict inequalities (8.10) and (8.11) can be replaced by the nonstrict one.

Theorem 8.11. *Let the inequality (7.17) hold, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : (v(a) - v(+\infty)) \operatorname{sgn} v(a) \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality (8.16) is fulfilled. If, moreover, the inequalities (8.12) and (8.13) hold, and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exists a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.5) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 8.11. The examples constructed in Section 11 (see On Remark 8.5, p. 94) also show that neither one of the strict inequalities in (8.12) and (8.13) can be replaced by the nonstrict one.

Theorem 8.12. *Let the inequality (7.19) hold, $F(0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let there exist $\ell_0, \ell_1 \in \tilde{\mathcal{P}}$ such that on the set $\{v \in C_0([a, +\infty[; R) : (v(a) - v(+\infty)) \operatorname{sgn} v(+\infty) \leq |h(0)|\}$ the inequality (8.17) is fulfilled. If, moreover, (8.14) and (8.15) hold, and for every $v \in \tilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$ with $\|v\| < +\infty$, there exists a finite limit (7.6), then the problem (6.1), (6.5) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 8.12. The examples constructed in Section 11 (see On Remark 8.6, p. 97) also show that neither one of the strict inequalities in (8.14) and (8.15) can be replaced by the nonstrict one.

9. Proofs of Theorems 8.1–8.12

Definition 9.1. Let $\hat{\omega} : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow R$ be a linear bounded functional. We will say that an operator $\hat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ belongs to the set $\mathcal{A}_{ab}(\hat{\omega})$, if there exists $r > 0$ such that for every $q^* \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $c^* \in R_+$, an arbitrary function $u \in \tilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying the inequalities

$$\hat{\omega}(u) \operatorname{sgn} u(a) \leq c^*, \quad (9.1)$$

$$[u'(t) - \hat{\ell}(u)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} u(t) \leq q^*(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (9.2)$$

admits the estimate

$$\|u\|_C \leq r \left(c^* + \int_a^b q^*(s) ds \right). \quad (9.3)$$

Definition 9.2. Let $\widehat{\omega} : C([a, b]; R) \rightarrow R$ be a linear bounded functional. We will say that an operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ belongs to the set $\mathcal{B}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, if there exists $r > 0$ such that for every $q^* \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $c^* \in R_+$, an arbitrary function $u \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfying the inequalities

$$\widehat{\omega}(u) \operatorname{sgn} u(b) \leq c^*, \quad (9.4)$$

$$[u'(t) - \widehat{\ell}(u)(t)] \operatorname{sgn} u(t) \geq -q^*(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (9.5)$$

admits the estimate (9.3).

Remark 9.1. Let $b > a$, $\ell \in \widetilde{\mathcal{L}}$, $\omega \in \text{ch}$, resp. $\omega \in \mathcal{W}_0$, and let the operators $\widehat{\ell}$ and $\widehat{\omega}$ be defined by (1.9) and (1.10), respectively, with φ and ψ given by (1.6)–(1.8). Then it is not difficult to verify that $\ell \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ ($\ell \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$) if and only if $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{A}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$ ($\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{B}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$).

To prove Theorems 8.1–8.12, we will need some auxiliary propositions. First we formulate several assertions from [9] in a suitable form for us.

Lemma 9.1 ([9, Lemma 12.4, p. 228]). *Let the operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ admit the representation $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$, where $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$. If there exists a function $\widehat{\gamma} \in \widetilde{C}([a, b];]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying the inequalities*

$$\widehat{\gamma}'(t) \geq \widehat{\ell}_0(\widehat{\gamma})(t) + \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (9.6)$$

$$\widehat{\gamma}(b) - \widehat{\gamma}(a) < 2, \quad (9.7)$$

then $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{A}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, where $\widehat{\omega}(v) \equiv v(a)$.

Lemma 9.2. *Let the operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ admit the representation $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$, where $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$. If there exists a function $\widehat{\gamma} \in \widetilde{C}([a, b];]0, +\infty[)$ satisfying the inequalities*

$$-\widehat{\gamma}'(t) \geq \widehat{\ell}_1(\widehat{\gamma})(t) + \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b],$$

$$\widehat{\gamma}(a) - \widehat{\gamma}(b) < 2,$$

then $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{B}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, where $\widehat{\omega}(v) \equiv v(b)$.

Proof. The assertion follows from Remark 2.16 and Lemma 12.4 in [9] (see pp. 28 and 228 therein). \square

Lemma 9.3 ([9, Lemma 12.1, p. 211]). *Let the operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ admit the representation $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$, where $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$. If*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (9.8)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds}, \quad (9.9)$$

then $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{A}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, where $\widehat{\omega}(v) \equiv v(a) - v(b)$.

Lemma 9.4 ([9, Lemma 12.2, p. 219]). *Let the operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ admit the representation $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$, where $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$. If*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 1,$$

$$\frac{\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds} < \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds},$$

then $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{B}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, where $\widehat{\omega}(v) \equiv v(b) - v(a)$.

Lemma 9.5. *Let the operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ admit the representation $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$, where $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$. If*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 1, \quad (9.10)$$

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds}, \quad (9.11)$$

then $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{A}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, where $\widehat{\omega}(v) \equiv v(a)$.

Proof. Let $q^* \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, $c \in R_+$, and $u \in \widetilde{C}([a, b]; R)$ satisfy (9.1), (9.2) with $\widehat{\omega}(u) = u(a)$. We will show that (9.3) holds with

$$r = \frac{1}{1 - \|\widehat{\ell}_0(1)\|_L} + \frac{1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L}{1 - \|\widehat{\ell}_0(1)\|_L - \frac{1}{4}\|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L^2}. \quad (9.12)$$

Obviously, u satisfies

$$u'(t) = \widehat{\ell}_0(u)(t) - \widehat{\ell}_1(u)(t) + \bar{q}(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (9.13)$$

where

$$\bar{q}(t) = u'(t) - \widehat{\ell}(u)(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b]. \quad (9.14)$$

Obviously,

$$\bar{q}(t) \operatorname{sgn} u(t) \leq q^*(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (9.15)$$

and

$$|u(a)| \leq c^*. \quad (9.16)$$

First suppose that u does not assume both positive and negative values (u is still nonnegative or still nonpositive). Put

$$\overline{M} = \max \{|u(t)| : t \in [a, b]\}, \quad (9.17)$$

and choose $t_0 \in [a, b]$ such that

$$|u(t_0)| = \overline{M}. \quad (9.18)$$

Obviously, $\overline{M} \geq 0$. Due to (9.15), (9.17), and the assumptions $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, the equality (9.13) implies

$$|u(t)|' \leq \overline{M} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(t) + q^*(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b]. \quad (9.19)$$

Now the integration of (9.19) from a to t_0 , in view of (9.16) and (9.18), results in

$$\overline{M} \leq \overline{M} \int_a^{t_0} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds + c^* + \int_a^{t_0} q^*(s) ds.$$

The last inequality, by virtue of (9.10), (9.17), and the assumptions $\widehat{\ell}_0 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$, $q^* \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, implies

$$\|u\|_C \leq \left(1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds\right)^{-1} \left(c^* + \int_a^b q^*(s) ds\right),$$

i.e., the estimate (9.3) holds with r defined by (9.12).

Now suppose that u assumes both positive and negative values. Put

$$M = \max \{u(t) : t \in [a, b]\}, \quad m = -\min \{u(t) : t \in [a, b]\}, \quad (9.20)$$

and choose $t_M, t_m \in [a, b]$ such that

$$u(t_M) = M, \quad u(t_m) = -m. \quad (9.21)$$

Obviously, $M > 0$, $m > 0$, and either

$$t_m < t_M \quad (9.22)$$

or

$$t_m > t_M. \quad (9.23)$$

First assume that (9.22) is fulfilled. It is clear that there exists $\alpha_2 \in]t_m, t_M[$ such that

$$u(t) > 0 \text{ for } \alpha_2 < t \leq t_M, \quad u(\alpha_2) = 0. \quad (9.24)$$

Let

$$\alpha_1 = \inf \left\{ t \in [a, t_m] : u(s) < 0 \text{ for } t \leq s \leq t_m \right\}. \quad (9.25)$$

Obviously,

$$u(t) < 0 \text{ for } \alpha_1 < t \leq t_m \quad (9.26)$$

and

$$\text{if } \alpha_1 > a, \quad \text{then } u(\alpha_1) = 0. \quad (9.27)$$

The integration of (9.13) from α_1 to t_m and from α_2 to t_M , in view of (9.15), (9.20), (9.21), (9.24), and (9.26), yields

$$u(\alpha_1) + m \leq M \int_{\alpha_1}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds + m \int_{\alpha_1}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds + \int_{\alpha_1}^{t_m} q^*(s) ds, \quad (9.28)$$

$$M \leq M \int_{\alpha_2}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds + m \int_{\alpha_2}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds + \int_{\alpha_2}^{t_M} q^*(s) ds. \quad (9.29)$$

It follows from (9.28) and (9.29), on account of (9.16) and (9.27), that

$$\begin{aligned} m(1 - C_1) &\leq MA_1 + c^* + \int_a^b q^*(s) ds, \\ M(1 - D_1) &\leq mB_1 + c^* + \int_a^b q^*(s) ds, \end{aligned} \quad (9.30)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} A_1 &= \int_{\alpha_1}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds, & B_1 &= \int_{\alpha_2}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds, \\ C_1 &= \int_{\alpha_1}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds, & D_1 &= \int_{\alpha_2}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds. \end{aligned}$$

Due to (9.10), $C_1 < 1$, $D_1 < 1$. Consequently, (9.30) implies

$$\begin{aligned} 0 < m(1 - C_1)(1 - D_1) &\leq A_1(mB_1 + c^* + \|q^*\|_L) + c^* + \|q^*\|_L \leq \\ &\leq mA_1B_1 + (1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L)(c^* + \|q^*\|_L), \\ 0 < M(1 - C_1)(1 - D_1) &\leq B_1(MA_1 + c^* + \|q^*\|_L) + c^* + \|q^*\|_L \leq \\ &\leq MA_1B_1 + (1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L)(c^* + \|q^*\|_L). \end{aligned} \quad (9.31)$$

Obviously,

$$\begin{aligned} (1 - C_1)(1 - D_1) &\geq 1 - (C_1 + D_1) \geq 1 - \|\widehat{\ell}_0(1)\|_L > 0, \\ 4A_1B_1 &\leq (A_1 + B_1)^2 \leq \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L^2. \end{aligned} \quad (9.32)$$

By (9.32) and (9.11), from (9.31) we get

$$\begin{aligned} m &\leq \frac{1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L}{1 - \|\widehat{\ell}_0(1)\|_L - \frac{1}{4}\|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L^2} (c^* + \|q^*\|_L), \\ M &\leq \frac{1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L}{1 - \|\widehat{\ell}_0(1)\|_L - \frac{1}{4}\|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L^2} (c^* + \|q^*\|_L). \end{aligned} \quad (9.33)$$

The inequalities (9.33), on account of (9.20) and (9.12), imply the estimate (9.3).

Now suppose that (9.23) is fulfilled. It is clear that there exists $\alpha_5 \in]t_M, t_m[$ such that

$$u(t) < 0 \text{ for } \alpha_5 < t \leq t_m, \quad u(\alpha_5) = 0. \quad (9.34)$$

Let

$$\alpha_4 = \inf \left\{ t \in [a, t_M] : u(s) > 0 \text{ for } t \leq s \leq t_M \right\}. \quad (9.35)$$

Obviously,

$$u(t) > 0 \text{ for } \alpha_4 < t \leq t_M, \quad (9.36)$$

and

$$\text{if } \alpha_4 > a, \quad \text{then } u(\alpha_4) = 0. \quad (9.37)$$

The integration of (9.13) from α_4 to t_M and from α_5 to t_m , in view of (9.15), (9.20), (9.21), (9.34), and (9.36), yields

$$M - u(\alpha_4) \leq M \int_{\alpha_4}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds + m \int_{\alpha_4}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds + \int_{\alpha_4}^{t_M} q^*(s) ds, \quad (9.38)$$

$$m \leq M \int_{\alpha_5}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds + m \int_{\alpha_5}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds + \int_{\alpha_5}^{t_m} q^*(s) ds. \quad (9.39)$$

It follows from (9.38) and (9.39), on account (9.16) and (9.37), that

$$\begin{aligned} M(1 - C_2) &\leq mA_2 + c^* + \int_a^b q^*(s) ds, \\ m(1 - D_2) &\leq MB_2 + c^* + \int_a^b q^*(s) ds, \end{aligned} \quad (9.40)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} A_2 &= \int_{\alpha_4}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds, & B_2 &= \int_{\alpha_5}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds, \\ C_2 &= \int_{\alpha_4}^{t_M} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds, & D_2 &= \int_{\alpha_5}^{t_m} \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds. \end{aligned}$$

Due to (9.10), $C_2 < 1$, $D_2 < 1$. Consequently, (9.40) implies

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &< M(1 - C_2)(1 - D_2) \leq A_2(MB_2 + c^* + \|q^*\|_L) + c^* + \|q^*\|_L \leq \\ &\leq MA_1B_1 + (1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L)(c^* + \|q^*\|_L), \\ 0 &< m(1 - C_2)(1 - D_2) \leq B_2(mA_2 + c^* + \|q^*\|_L) + c^* + \|q^*\|_L \leq \\ &\leq mA_2B_2 + (1 + \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L)(c^* + \|q^*\|_L). \end{aligned} \quad (9.41)$$

Obviously,

$$(1 - C_2)(1 - D_2) \geq 1 - (C_2 + D_2) \geq 1 - \|\widehat{\ell}_0(1)\|_L > 0, \quad (9.42)$$

$$4A_2B_2 \leq (A_2 + B_2)^2 \leq \|\widehat{\ell}_1(1)\|_L^2.$$

By (9.42) and (9.11), from (9.41) we get the inequalities (9.33), which, on account of (9.20) and (9.12), imply the estimate (9.3). \square

Analogously one can prove the following assertion.

Lemma 9.6. *Let the operator $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{L}_{ab}$ admit the representation $\widehat{\ell} = \widehat{\ell}_0 - \widehat{\ell}_1$, where $\widehat{\ell}_0, \widehat{\ell}_1 \in \mathcal{P}_{ab}$. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds < 1,$$

$$\int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_0(1)(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^b \widehat{\ell}_1(1)(s) ds},$$

then $\widehat{\ell} \in \mathcal{B}_{ab}(\widehat{\omega})$, where $\widehat{\omega}(v) \equiv v(b)$.

In the proofs listed below, whenever $\ell \in \widetilde{\mathcal{L}}$, then the operator $\widehat{\ell}$ is defined by (1.9) with φ and ψ given by (1.6)–(1.8).

Proof of Theorem 8.1. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$, and define function $\widehat{\gamma}$ by (3.16), where φ is given by (1.6) and (1.8). Then the assumptions of Lemma 9.1 are satisfied. Consequently, by virtue of Remark 9.1, we get $\ell_0 - \ell_1 \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ (with $\omega(v) \equiv v(a)$). Now the validity of theorem follows from Theorem 7.3. \square

Proof of Theorem 8.2. All the assumptions of Lemma 9.5 are satisfied. Consequently, by virtue of Remark 9.1, we get $\ell_0 - \ell_1 \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ (with $\omega(v) \equiv v(a)$). Now the validity of theorem follows from Theorem 7.3. \square

Proof of Theorem 8.3. Let $b \in]a, +\infty[$, and define function $\widehat{\gamma}$ by (3.16), where φ is given by (1.6) and (1.8). Then the assumptions of Lemma 9.2 are satisfied. Consequently, by virtue of Remark 9.1, we get $\ell_0 - \ell_1 \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$ (with $\omega(v) \equiv v(+\infty)$). Now the validity of theorem follows from Theorem 7.4. \square

Proof of Theorem 8.4. All the assumptions of Lemma 9.6 are satisfied. Consequently, by virtue of Remark 9.1, we get $\ell_0 - \ell_1 \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$ (with $\omega(v) \equiv v(+\infty)$). Now the validity of theorem follows from Theorem 7.4. \square

Proof of Theorem 8.5. All the assumptions of Lemma 9.3 are satisfied. Consequently, by virtue of Remark 9.1, we get $\ell_0 - \ell_1 \in \mathcal{A}(\omega)$ (with $\omega(v) \equiv v(a) - v(+\infty)$). Now the validity of theorem follows from Theorem 7.3. \square

Proof of Theorem 8.6. All the assumptions of Lemma 9.4 are satisfied. Consequently, by virtue of Remark 9.1, we get $\ell_0 - \ell_1 \in \mathcal{B}(\omega)$ (with $\omega(v) \equiv v(+\infty) - v(a)$). Now the validity of theorem follows from Theorem 7.4. \square

Theorems 8.7–8.12 can be proven analogously to Theorems 8.1–8.6, just Theorem 7.5 (Theorem 7.6) should be used instead of Theorem 7.3 (Theorem 7.4).

10. Equations with Deviating Arguments

In this section we will establish some consequences of the main results from Section 8 for the equation with deviating arguments (6.1').

In what follows we will use the notation

$$p_0(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m p_k(t), \quad g_0(t) = \sum_{k=1}^m g_k(t) \quad \text{for } t \geq a$$

and we will assume that $q \in K([a, +\infty[\times R_+; R_+)$ is nondecreasing in the second argument, $c : R_+ \rightarrow R_+$ is a continuous function, and

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} \frac{1}{x} \left(c(x) + \int_a^{+\infty} q(s, x) ds \right) = 0.$$

10.1. Bounded Solutions.

Corollary 10.1. *Let the condition (7.12) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality*

$$f(t, x, x_1, \dots, x_n) \operatorname{sgn} x \leq q(t, |x|) \quad \text{for } t \geq a \quad (10.1)$$

hold. Let, moreover, at least one of the following items be fulfilled:

a) $\tau_k(t) \leq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$),

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) \exp \left(\int_s^{+\infty} p_0(\xi) d\xi \right) ds < 2; \quad (10.2)$$

b) $g_0 \equiv 0$, $\int_a^{\tau_k^*} p_0(\xi) d\xi \neq 0$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), and let there exist $y > 0$ such that

$$\operatorname{ess\,sup} \left\{ \int_t^{\tau_k(t)} p_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \eta_k(y) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m), \quad (10.3)$$

where

$$\eta_k(y) = \frac{1}{y} \ln \left(y + \frac{y}{\exp \left(y \int_a^{\tau_k^*} p_0(\xi) d\xi \right) - 1} \right),$$

$$\tau_k^* = \operatorname{ess\,sup} \{ \tau_k(t) : t \geq a \}.$$

Then the problem (6.1'), (6.3) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 10.1. Corollary 10.1 is unimprovable in that sense that the strict inequality (10.2) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.1, p. 89).

Corollary 10.2. *Let the condition (7.12) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.1) hold. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}, \quad (10.4)$$

then the problem (6.1'), (6.3) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 10.2. Corollary 10.2 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities in (10.4) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.2, p. 90).

Corollary 10.3. *Let the condition (7.15) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality*

$$f(t, x, x_1, \dots, x_n) \operatorname{sgn} x \geq -q(t, |x|) \quad \text{for } t \geq a \quad (10.5)$$

hold. Let, moreover, at least one of the following items be fulfilled:

a) $\mu_k(t) \geq t$ for $t \geq a$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$),

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) \exp \left(\int_a^s g_0(\xi) d\xi \right) ds < 2; \quad (10.6)$$

b) $p_0 \equiv 0$, $\int_{\mu_k^*}^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi \neq 0$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$), and let there exist $y > 0$

such that

$$\operatorname{ess\,sup}_{\mu_k(t)} \left\{ \int_a^t g_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \vartheta_k(y) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m),$$

where

$$\vartheta_k(y) = \frac{1}{y} \ln \left(y + \frac{y}{\exp \left(y \int_{\mu_k^*}^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi \right) - 1} \right),$$

$$\mu_k^* = \operatorname{ess\,inf} \{ \mu_k(t) : t \geq a \}.$$

Then the equation (6.1') has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover,

$$f \in K([a + \infty[\times R^{n+1}; R), \quad (10.7)$$

then the problem (6.1'), (6.4) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 10.3. Corollary 10.3 is unimprovable in that sense that the strict inequality (10.6) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.3, p. 92).

Corollary 10.4. *Let the condition (7.15) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.5) hold. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1, \quad \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}, \quad (10.8)$$

then the equation (6.1') has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.4) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 10.4. Corollary 10.4 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities in (10.8) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.4, p. 93).

Corollary 10.5. *Let the condition (7.12) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.1) hold. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 1, \quad (10.9)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds}, \quad (10.10)$$

then the equation (6.1') has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.5) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 10.5. Corollary 10.5 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities (10.9) and (10.10) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.5, p. 94).

Corollary 10.6. *Let the condition (7.15) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.5) hold. If, moreover,*

$$\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds < 1, \quad (10.11)$$

$$\frac{\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds} < \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds < 2 \sqrt{1 - \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds}, \quad (10.12)$$

then the equation (6.1') has at least one bounded solution. If, moreover, the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.5) has at least one bounded solution.

Remark 10.6. Corollary 10.6 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities (10.11) and (10.12) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.6, p. 97).

In Corollaries 10.7–10.12, the conditions guaranteeing the existence of a unique bounded solution to the problems (6.1'), (6.k) ($k = 3, 4, 5$) are established.

Corollary 10.7. *Let (7.17) be fulfilled, $f(\cdot, 0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality*

$$[f(t, x, x_1, \dots, x_n) - f(t, y, y_1, \dots, y_n)] \operatorname{sgn}(x - y) \leq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (10.13)$$

hold. If, moreover, at least one of the conditions a) or b) in Corollary 10.1 is fulfilled, then the problem (6.1'), (6.3) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 10.7. Corollary 10.7 is unimprovable in that sense that the strict inequality (10.2) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.1, p. 89).

Corollary 10.8. *Let (7.17) be fulfilled, $f(\cdot, 0) \in L([a, +\infty[; R)$, and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.13) hold. If, moreover, the inequalities (10.4) hold, then the problem (6.1'), (6.3) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 10.8. Corollary 10.8 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities in (10.4) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.2, p. 90).

Corollary 10.9. *Let the condition (7.19) be fulfilled, and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality*

$$[f(t, x, x_1, \dots, x_n) - f(t, y, y_1, \dots, y_n)] \operatorname{sgn}(x - y) \geq 0 \text{ for } t \geq a \quad (10.14)$$

hold. If, moreover, at least one of the conditions a) or b) in Corollary 10.3 is fulfilled and the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.4) has a unique bounded solution.

Remark 10.9. Corollary 10.9 is unimprovable in that sense that the strict inequality (10.6) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.3, p. 92).

Corollary 10.10. *Let the condition (7.19) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.14) hold. If, moreover, the inequalities (10.8) are satisfied and the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.4) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 10.10. Corollary 10.10 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities in (10.8) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.4, p. 93).

Corollary 10.11. *Let the condition (7.17) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.13) hold. If, moreover, the inequalities (10.9) and (10.10) are satisfied and the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.5) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 10.11. Corollary 10.11 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities (10.9) and (10.10) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.5, p. 94).

Corollary 10.12. *Let the condition (7.19) be fulfilled and let on the set R^{n+1} the inequality (10.14) hold. If, moreover, the inequalities (10.11) and (10.12) are satisfied and the inclusion (10.7) holds, then the problem (6.1'), (6.5) has a unique bounded solution.*

Remark 10.12. Corollary 10.12 is unimprovable in that sense that neither one of the strict inequalities (10.11) and (10.12) can be replaced by the nonstrict one (see On Remark 8.6, p. 97).

10.2. Proofs. *Proof of Corollary 10.1.* Put

$$F(v)(t) \stackrel{def}{=} \sum_{k=1}^m \left(p_k(t)v(\tau_k(t)) - g_k(t)v(\mu_k(t)) \right) + f(t, v(t), v(\nu_1(t)), \dots, v(\nu_n(t))) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (10.15)$$

$$\ell_0(v)(t) \stackrel{def}{=} \sum_{k=1}^m p_k(t)v(\tau_k(t)) \text{ for } t \geq a, \quad (10.16)$$

$$\ell_1(v)(t) \stackrel{def}{=} \sum_{k=1}^m g_k(t)v(\mu_k(t)) \text{ for } t \geq a. \quad (10.17)$$

Then, obviously, (10.1) implies (8.1).

a) Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\varepsilon \exp \left(\int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) ds \right) + \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) \exp \left(\int_s^{+\infty} p_0(\xi) d\xi \right) ds < 2$$

and put

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma(t) = & \exp \left(\int_a^t p_0(s) ds \right) \times \\ & \times \left(\varepsilon + \int_a^t g_0(s) \exp \left(- \int_a^s p_0(\xi) d\xi \right) ds \right) \text{ for } t \geq a. \end{aligned}$$

b) Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ess sup} \left\{ \int_t^{\tau_k(t)} p_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \\ < \frac{1}{y} \ln \left(y + \frac{y(1-\varepsilon)}{\exp \left(y \int_a^{\tau_k^*} p_0(\xi) d\xi \right) - (1-\varepsilon)} \right) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m), \end{aligned}$$

and put

$$\gamma(t) = \frac{\exp\left(y \int_a^t p_0(s) ds\right) - (1 - \varepsilon)}{\exp\left(y \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(\xi) d\xi\right) - 1} \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

Then, in both cases a) and b), it can be easily verified that γ satisfies (8.2) and (8.3). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 8.1 are fulfilled. \square

Proof of Corollary 10.2. Let the operators F , ℓ_0 , and ℓ_1 be defined by (10.15)–(10.17). Then (10.1) implies (8.1) and the condition (10.4) results in (8.4) and (8.5). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 8.2 are fulfilled. \square

Proof of Corollary 10.3. Let the operators F , ℓ_0 , and ℓ_1 be defined by (10.15)–(10.17). Then, obviously, (10.5) and (10.7) imply (8.6) and (7.6), respectively.

a) Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\varepsilon \exp\left(\int_a^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) + \int_a^{+\infty} p_0(s) \exp\left(\int_a^s g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds < 2$$

and put

$$\begin{aligned} \gamma(t) = & \exp\left(\int_t^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) \times \\ & \times \left(\varepsilon + \int_t^{+\infty} p_0(s) \exp\left(-\int_s^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) ds\right) \quad \text{for } t \geq a. \end{aligned}$$

b) Choose $\varepsilon > 0$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \text{ess sup}_{\mu_k(t)} \left\{ \int_t^t g_0(s) ds : t \geq a \right\} < \\ < \frac{1}{y} \ln \left(y + \frac{y(1 - \varepsilon)}{\exp\left(y \int_{\mu_k^*}^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) - (1 - \varepsilon)} \right) \quad (k = 1, \dots, m), \end{aligned}$$

and put

$$\gamma(t) = \frac{\exp\left(y \int_t^{+\infty} g_0(s) ds\right) - (1 - \varepsilon)}{\exp\left(y \int_a^{+\infty} g_0(\xi) d\xi\right) - 1} \quad \text{for } t \geq a.$$

Then, in both cases a) and b), it can be easily verified that γ satisfies (8.7)–(8.9). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 8.3 are fulfilled. \square

Proof of Corollary 10.4. Let the operators F , ℓ_0 , and ℓ_1 be defined by (10.15)–(10.17). Then (10.5) and (10.7) imply (8.6) and (7.6), respectively, and the condition (10.8) results in (8.10) and (8.11). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 8.4 are fulfilled. \square

Proof of Corollary 10.5. Let the operators F , ℓ_0 , and ℓ_1 be defined by (10.15)–(10.17). Then (10.1) and (10.7) imply (8.1) and (7.6), respectively, and the conditions (10.9) and (10.10) result in (8.12) and (8.13). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 8.5 are fulfilled. \square

Proof of Corollary 10.6. Let the operators F , ℓ_0 , and ℓ_1 be defined by (10.15)–(10.17). Then (10.5) and (10.7) imply (8.6) and (7.6), respectively, and the conditions (10.11) and (10.12) result in (8.14) and (8.15). Consequently, the assumptions of Theorem 8.6 are fulfilled. \square

In a similar manner as in the proofs of Corollaries 10.1–10.6 one can show that Corollaries 10.7–10.12 follow from Theorems 8.7–8.12.

11. Comments

Remark 11.1. Let the functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$, and the operator $G \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$ be such that the inequality

$$[G(u)(t) - G(v)(t)] \operatorname{sgn}(u(t) - v(t)) \leq 0 \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b], \quad u, v \in C([a, b]; R),$$

resp.

$$[G(u)(t) - G(v)(t)] \operatorname{sgn}(u(t) - v(t)) \geq 0 \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b], \quad u, v \in C([a, b]; R),$$

is fulfilled, and such that on the segment $[a, b]$ the problem

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + G(u)(t), \quad u(a) = 0, \quad (11.1)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + G(u)(t), \quad u(b) = 0, \quad (11.2)$$

resp.

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + G(u)(t), \quad u(a) - u(b) = 0, \quad (11.3)$$

has no solution. If we put, for $v \in C_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$,

$$\ell_0(v)(t) = \begin{cases} p(t)v(\tau(t)) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases} \quad (11.4)$$

$$\ell_1(v)(t) = \begin{cases} g(t)v(\mu(t)) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases} \quad (11.5)$$

$$F(v)(t) = \begin{cases} p(t)v(\tau(t)) - g(t)v(\mu(t)) + G(v_b)(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, \end{cases} \quad (11.6)$$

$$h(v) \equiv 0, \quad (11.7)$$

where v_b is a restriction of v to the segment $[a, b]$, then there exists a finite limit (7.6) for every $v \in \widetilde{C}_{loc}([a, +\infty[; R)$, the inequalities (7.12), (7.15), (7.17), (7.19), (8.1), (8.6), (8.16), and (8.17) are fulfilled, respectively, with $c \equiv 0$ and

$$q(t, x) = \begin{cases} |G(0)(t)| & \text{for } t \in [a, b], x \in R_+, \\ 0 & \text{for } t > b, x \in R_+, \end{cases} \quad (11.8)$$

and the problem (6.1), (6.3), resp. (6.1), (6.4), resp. (6.1), (6.5) has no solution.

On Remark 8.1. Let $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, $p \equiv 0$, $\tau \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$ be arbitrary,

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} b & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

and choose $g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = 1.$$

Further, let

$$G(v)(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ -v(t)|v(t)| & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

where $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ is such that

$$\int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds \geq \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1}.$$

Put

$$\gamma(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 1 + \int_a^b g(s) ds & \text{for } t > b. \end{cases}$$

Then the assumptions of Theorems 8.1 and 8.7 are fulfilled (with ℓ_0, ℓ_1, F, h , and q defined by (11.4)–(11.8), $c \equiv 0$) except (8.3), instead of which we have

$$\gamma(+\infty) - \gamma(a) = 2.$$

Moreover, the problem (11.1) has no solution. Indeed, assume on the contrary that (11.1) has a solution u . Then from (11.1) we get

$$\begin{aligned} u(t_1) &= -u(b), \\ u(t_2) &= \frac{u(t_1)}{1 + |u(t_1)|(t_2 - t_1)}, \\ u(b) &= u(t_2) - u(t_1) + \int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds. \end{aligned}$$

Hence we obtain

$$\int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds = -\frac{u(t_1)}{1 + |u(t_1)|(t_2 - t_1)} \leq \frac{|u(t_1)|}{1 + |u(t_1)|(t_2 - t_1)} < \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1},$$

a contradiction.

Consequently, according to Remark 11.1 (see p. 88), we have shown that the strict inequality (8.3) in Theorems 8.1 and 8.7 (the inequality (10.2) in Corollaries 10.1 and 10.7) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one.

On Remark 8.2. According to Remark 11.1 (see p. 88), for every point $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_a$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$, and a suitable operator $G \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$ in such a way that

$$\int_a^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^b g(s) ds = y_0 \quad (11.9)$$

and such that the problem (11.1) has no solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_a$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs to one of the following sets:

$$\begin{aligned} D_a^1 &= \{(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x \geq 1\}, \\ D_a^2 &= \{(x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, y \geq 2\sqrt{1-x}\}. \end{aligned}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_a^1$, $t_0 \in [a, b]$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_0} p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b p(s) ds = x_0 - 1, \quad \int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_a^{t_0} q_0(s) ds \neq 0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_0$, $\mu \equiv a$, $G \equiv q_0$. Then the problem (11.1) has no solution. Indeed, assuming that u is a solution to (11.1), the integration of (11.1) from a to t_0 yields

$$u(t_0) = u(a) + u(t_0) \int_a^{t_0} p(s) ds - u(a) \int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds + \int_a^{t_0} q_0(s) ds,$$

which, together with the initial condition in (11.1) results in a contradiction

$$\int_a^{t_0} q_0(s) ds = 0.$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_a^2$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_2} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = \sqrt{1-x_0}, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = y_0 - 2\sqrt{1-x_0}, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = \sqrt{1-x_0}. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$,

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} b & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

and

$$G(v)(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ -v(t)|v(t)| & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

where $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ is such that

$$\int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds \geq \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1}.$$

Then the problem (11.1) has no solution. Indeed, assume on the contrary that (11.1) has a solution u . Then from (11.1) we get

$$\begin{aligned} u(t_1) &= -u(b)\sqrt{1-x_0}, \\ u(t_2) &= \frac{u(t_1)}{1 + |u(t_1)|(t_2 - t_1)}, \\ u(b) &= u(t_2) + u(b)x_0 - u(t_1)\sqrt{1-x_0} + \int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds. \end{aligned}$$

Hence we obtain

$$\int_{t_2}^b q_0(s) ds = -\frac{u(t_1)}{1 + |u(t_1)|(t_2 - t_1)} \leq \frac{|u(t_1)|}{1 + |u(t_1)|(t_2 - t_1)} < \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1},$$

a contradiction.

Consequently, we have shown that the strict inequalities (8.4) and (8.5) in Theorems 8.2 and 8.8 (the inequalities (10.4) in Corollaries 10.2 and 10.8) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

On Remark 8.3. Let $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, $g \equiv 0$, $\mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$ be arbitrary,

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_2 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_1, b], \end{cases}$$

and choose $p \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = 1.$$

Further, let

$$G(v)(t) = \begin{cases} q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ v(t)|v(t)| & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

where $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ is such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds \geq \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1}.$$

Put

$$\gamma(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, b], \\ 1 & \text{for } t > b. \end{cases}$$

Then the assumptions of Theorems 8.3 and 8.9 are fulfilled (with ℓ_0, ℓ_1, F, h , and q defined by (11.4)–(11.8), $c \equiv 0$) except (8.9), instead of which we have

$$\gamma(a) - \gamma(+\infty) = 2.$$

Moreover, the problem (11.2) has no solution. Indeed, assume on the contrary that (11.2) has a solution u . Then from (11.2) we get

$$u(t_1) = u(a) + u(t_2) + \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds,$$

$$u(t_1) = \frac{u(t_2)}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_2 - t_1)},$$

$$0 = u(t_2) + u(a).$$

Hence we obtain

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds = \frac{u(t_2)}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_2 - t_1)} \leq \frac{|u(t_2)|}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_2 - t_1)} < \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1},$$

a contradiction.

Consequently, according to Remark 11.1 (see p. 88), we have shown that the strict inequality (8.9) in Theorems 8.3 and 8.9 (the inequality (10.6) in Corollaries 10.3 and 10.9) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict one.

On Remark 8.4. According to Remark 11.1 (see p. 88), for every point $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_{+\infty}$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$, and a suitable operator $G \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$ in such a way that (11.9) holds and such that the problem (11.2) has no solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_{+\infty}$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs to one of the following sets:

$$D_{+\infty}^1 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y \geq 1 \right\},$$

$$D_{+\infty}^2 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, x \geq 2\sqrt{1-y} \right\}.$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_{+\infty}^1$, $t_0 \in [a, b]$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ and $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that

$$\int_a^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{t_0} g(s) ds = y_0 - 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b g(s) ds = 1, \quad \int_{t_0}^b q_0(s) ds \neq 0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$, $\mu \equiv t_0$, $G \equiv q_0$. Then the problem (11.2) has no solution. Indeed, assuming that u is a solution to (11.2), the integration of (11.2) from t_0 to b yields

$$u(b) = u(t_0) + u(b) \int_{t_0}^b p(s) ds - u(t_0) \int_{t_0}^b g(s) ds + \int_{t_0}^b q_0(s) ds,$$

which, together with the initial condition in (11.2) results in a contradiction

$$\int_{t_0}^b q_0(s) ds = 0.$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_{+\infty}^2$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = \sqrt{1-y_0}, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = x_0 - 2\sqrt{1-y_0},$$

$$\int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = \sqrt{1-y_0}, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b g(s) ds = 0.$$

Put $\mu \equiv a$,

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_2 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ b & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

and

$$G(v)(t) = \begin{cases} q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ v(t)|v(t)| & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b], \end{cases}$$

where $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ is such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds \geq \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1}.$$

Then the problem (11.2) has no solution. Indeed, assume on the contrary that (11.2) has a solution u . Then from (11.2) we get

$$\begin{aligned} u(t_1) &= u(a) + u(t_2)\sqrt{1 - y_0} - u(a)y_0 + \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds, \\ u(t_1) &= \frac{u(t_2)}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_2 - t_1)}, \\ 0 &= u(t_2) + u(a)\sqrt{1 - y_0}. \end{aligned}$$

Hence we obtain

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds = \frac{u(t_2)}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_2 - t_1)} \leq \frac{|u(t_2)|}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_2 - t_1)} < \frac{1}{t_2 - t_1},$$

a contradiction.

Consequently, we have shown that the strict inequalities (8.10) and (8.11) in Theorems 8.4 and 8.10 (the inequalities (10.8) in Corollaries 10.4 and 10.10) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

On Remark 8.5. According to Remark 11.1 (see p. 88), for every point $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_p^+$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$, and a suitable operator $G \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$ in such a way that (11.9) holds and such that the problem (11.3) has no solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_p^+$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs at least to one of the following sets:

$$\begin{aligned} D_1 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x \geq 1 \right\}, \\ D_2 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, y \leq \frac{x}{1-x} \right\}, \\ D_3 &= \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : x < 1, y \geq 2\sqrt{1-x} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_1$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = 0,$$

$$\int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b g(s) ds = 0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$, $\mu \equiv t_1$, and

$$z(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ -\frac{x_0(1+y_0) - y_0}{(b-t_2)(1+y_0) + (x_0(1+y_0) - y_0)(b-t)} & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then the problem

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + z(t)u(t), \quad u(a) - u(b) = 0 \quad (11.10)$$

has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + y_0 - \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 + (1 + y_0) \int_a^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 + y_0 + \frac{x_0(1+y_0) - y_0}{b-t_2}(b-t) & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

According to Remark 1.1 (see p. 11) there exists $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that the problem

$$u'(t) = p(t)u(\tau(t)) - g(t)u(\mu(t)) + z(t)u(t) + q_0(t), \quad (11.11)$$

$$u(a) - u(b) = 0$$

has no solution. Now, if we put

$$G(v)(t) \stackrel{\text{def}}{=} z(t)v(t) + q_0(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \quad (11.12)$$

then the problem (11.3) has no solution.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_2$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = 0,$$

$$\int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = 0.$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_1$, $\mu \equiv a$, and

$$z(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ -\frac{x_0 - y_0(1 - x_0)}{(b - t_2)(1 - x_0) + (x_0 - y_0(1 - x_0))(b - t)} & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then the problem (11.10) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 - x_0 + \int_a^t p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 - (1 - x_0) \int_a^t g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 - x_0 + \frac{x_0 - y_0(1 - x_0)}{b - t_2}(b - t) & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

According to Remark 1.1 (see p. 11) there exists $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that the problem (11.11) has no solution. Now, if we define the operator G by (11.12), then the problem (11.3) has no solution.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_3$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < t_4 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_3} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_3}^{t_4} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_4}^b p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = 0, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = \sqrt{1 - x_0}, \quad \int_{t_2}^{t_3} g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_3}^{t_4} g(s) ds = \sqrt{1 - x_0}, \\ \int_{t_4}^b g(s) ds = y_0 - 2\sqrt{1 - x_0}. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$,

$$\mu(t) = \begin{cases} b & \text{for } t \in [a, t_2[, \\ t_2 & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_4[, \\ t_1 & \text{for } t \in [t_4, b], \end{cases}$$

and

$$G(v)(t) = \begin{cases} -v(t)|v(t)| & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[\cup [t_2, t_3[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[\cup [t_3, t_4[, \\ q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [t_4, b], \end{cases}$$

where $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ is such that

$$\int_{t_4}^b q_0(s) ds \geq \frac{y_0 - \sqrt{1 - x_0}}{t_1 - a} + \frac{1}{t_3 - t_2}.$$

Then the problem (11.3) has no solution. Indeed, assume on the contrary that (11.3) has a solution u . Then from (11.3) we get

$$u(t_1) = \frac{u(a)}{1 + |u(a)|(t_1 - a)}, \quad (11.13)$$

$$u(t_2) = u(t_1) - u(b)\sqrt{1 - x_0}, \quad (11.14)$$

$$u(t_3) = \frac{u(t_2)}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_3 - t_2)}, \quad (11.15)$$

$$u(t_4) = u(t_3) - u(t_2)\sqrt{1 - x_0} + u(b)x_0, \quad (11.16)$$

$$u(b) = u(t_4) - u(t_1)(y_0 - 2\sqrt{1 - x_0}) + \int_{t_4}^b q_0(s) ds. \quad (11.17)$$

The equalities (11.14), (11.16), and (11.17) imply

$$\int_{t_4}^b q_0(s) ds = u(t_1)(y_0 - \sqrt{1 - x_0}) - u(t_3).$$

Hence, by virtue of (11.13) and (11.15), we get

$$\begin{aligned} \int_{t_4}^b q_0(s) ds &= \frac{(y_0 - \sqrt{1 - x_0})u(a)}{1 + |u(a)|(t_1 - a)} - \frac{u(t_2)}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_3 - t_2)} \leq \\ &\leq \frac{(y_0 - \sqrt{1 - x_0})|u(a)|}{1 + |u(a)|(t_1 - a)} + \frac{|u(t_2)|}{1 + |u(t_2)|(t_3 - t_2)} < \\ &< \frac{y_0 - \sqrt{1 - x_0}}{t_1 - a} + \frac{1}{t_3 - t_2}, \end{aligned}$$

a contradiction.

Consequently, we have shown that the strict inequalities (8.12) and (8.13) in Theorems 8.5 and 8.11 (the inequalities (10.9) and (10.10) in Corollaries 10.5 and 10.11) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

On Remark 8.6. According to Remark 11.1 (see p. 88), for every point $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_p^-$, it is sufficient to construct functions $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$, $\tau, \mu \in \mathcal{M}_{ab}$, and a suitable operator $G \in \mathcal{K}_{ab}$ in such a way that (11.9) holds and such that the problem (11.3) has no solution.

It is clear that if $x_0, y_0 \in R_+$ and $(x_0, y_0) \notin D_p^-$, then (x_0, y_0) belongs at least to one of the following sets:

$$D_4 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y \geq 1 \right\},$$

$$D_5 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, x \leq \frac{y}{1 - y} \right\},$$

$$D_6 = \left\{ (x, y) \in R_+ \times R_+ : y < 1, x \geq 2\sqrt{1 - y} \right\}.$$

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_4$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_2} p(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds = 0, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds = y_0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = 0. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv t_2$, $\mu \equiv a$, and

$$z(t) = \begin{cases} \frac{y_0(1+x_0) - x_0}{(t_1 - a)(1+x_0) + (y_0(1+x_0) - x_0)(t-a)} & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then the problem (11.10) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 + x_0 + \frac{y_0(1+x_0) - x_0}{t_1 - a} (t - a) & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 + (1+x_0) \int_t^{t_2} g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 + x_0 - \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

According to Remark 1.1 (see p. 11) there exists $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that the problem (11.11) has no solution. Now, if we define the operator G by (11.12), then the problem (11.3) has no solution.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_5$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds = x_0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b p(s) ds = 0, \\ \int_a^{t_2} g(s) ds = 0, \quad \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds = y_0. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\tau \equiv b$, $\mu \equiv t_2$, and

$$z(t) = \begin{cases} \frac{y_0 - x_0(1-y_0)}{(t_1 - a)(1-y_0) + (y_0 - x_0(1-y_0))(t-a)} & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, b]. \end{cases}$$

Then the problem (11.10) has a nontrivial solution

$$u(t) = \begin{cases} 1 - y_0 + \frac{y_0 - x_0(1 - y_0)}{t_1 - a} (t - a) & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 1 - (1 - y_0) \int_t^b p(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[, \\ 1 - y_0 + \int_t^b g(s) ds & \text{for } t \in [t_2, b]. \end{cases}$$

According to Remark 1.1 (see p. 11) there exists $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ such that the problem (11.11) has no solution. Now, if we define the operator G by (11.12), then the problem (11.3) has no solution.

Let $(x_0, y_0) \in D_6$, $a < t_1 < t_2 < t_3 < t_4 < b$, and choose $p, g \in L([a, b]; R_+)$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_1} p(s) ds &= x_0 - 2\sqrt{1 - y_0}, & \int_{t_1}^{t_2} p(s) ds &= \sqrt{1 - y_0}, & \int_{t_2}^{t_3} p(s) ds &= 0, \\ \int_{t_3}^{t_4} p(s) ds &= \sqrt{1 - y_0}, & \int_{t_4}^b p(s) ds &= 0, & \int_a^{t_1} g(s) ds &= 0, \\ \int_{t_1}^{t_2} g(s) ds &= y_0, & \int_{t_2}^b g(s) ds &= 0. \end{aligned}$$

Put $\mu \equiv a$,

$$\tau(t) = \begin{cases} t_4 & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ t_3 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_3[, \\ a & \text{for } t \in [t_3, b], \end{cases}$$

and

$$G(v)(t) = \begin{cases} q_0(t) & \text{for } t \in [a, t_1[, \\ 0 & \text{for } t \in [t_1, t_2[\cup [t_3, t_4[, \\ v(t)|v(t)| & \text{for } t \in [t_2, t_3[\cup [t_4, b], \end{cases}$$

where $q_0 \in L([a, b]; R)$ is such that

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds \geq \frac{x_0 - \sqrt{1 - y_0}}{b - t_4} + \frac{1}{t_3 - t_2}.$$

Then the problem (11.3) has no solution. Indeed, assume on the contrary that (11.3) has a solution u . Then from (11.3) we get

$$u(t_1) = u(a) + u(t_4)(x_0 - 2\sqrt{1-y_0}) + \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds, \quad (11.18)$$

$$u(t_2) = u(t_1) + u(t_3)\sqrt{1-y_0} - u(a)y_0, \quad (11.19)$$

$$u(t_2) = \frac{u(t_3)}{1 + |u(t_3)|(t_3 - t_2)}, \quad (11.20)$$

$$u(t_4) = u(t_3) + u(a)\sqrt{1-y_0}, \quad (11.21)$$

$$u(t_4) = \frac{u(b)}{1 + |u(b)|(b - t_4)}. \quad (11.22)$$

The equalities (11.18), (11.19), and (11.21) imply

$$\int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds = u(t_2) - u(t_4)(x_0 - \sqrt{1-y_0}).$$

Hence, by virtue of (11.20) and (11.22), we get

$$\begin{aligned} \int_a^{t_1} q_0(s) ds &= \frac{u(t_3)}{1 + |u(t_3)|(t_3 - t_2)} - \frac{(x_0 - \sqrt{1-y_0})u(b)}{1 + |u(b)|(b - t_4)} \leq \\ &\leq \frac{|u(t_3)|}{1 + |u(t_3)|(t_3 - t_2)} + \frac{(x_0 - \sqrt{1-y_0})|u(b)|}{1 + |u(b)|(b - t_4)} < \\ &< \frac{1}{t_3 - t_2} + \frac{x_0 - \sqrt{1-y_0}}{b - t_4}, \end{aligned}$$

a contradiction.

Consequently, we have shown that the strict inequalities (8.14) and (8.15) in Theorems 8.6 and 8.12 (the inequalities (10.11) and (10.12) in Corollaries 10.6 and 10.12) cannot be replaced by the nonstrict ones.

Acknowledgements

Publication of this research was supported by RVO 67985840 and by Grant No. FSI-S-11-3 *Modern methods of mathematical problem modelling in engineering*.

We would like to express our sincere gratitude to doc. Jiří Šremr, PhD. who read all the manuscript and gave us a number of valuable comments.

Bibliography

1. N. V. AZBELEV, V. P. MAKSIMOV, AND L. F. RAKHMATULLINA, Introduction to the theory of functional-differential equations. (Russian) “*Nauka*”, Moscow, 1991..
2. E. BRAVYI, A note on the Fredholm property of boundary value problems for linear functional differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **20** (2000), 133–135.
3. E. BRAVYI, R. HAKL, AND A. LOMTATIDZE, Optimal conditions for unique solvability of the Cauchy problem for first order linear functional differential equations. *Czechoslovak Math. J.* **52(127)** (2002), No. 3, 513–530.
4. Z. DOŠLÁ AND I. KIGURADZE, On vanishing at infinity solutions of second order linear differential equations with advanced arguments. *Funkcial. Ekvac.* **41** (1998), No. 2, 189–205.
5. Z. DOŠLÁ AND I. KIGURADZE, On boundedness and stability of solutions of second order linear differential equations with advanced arguments. *Adv. Math. Sci. Appl.* **9** (1999), no. 1, 1–24.
6. R. HAKL, On bounded solutions of systems of linear functional-differential equations. *Georgian Math. J.* **6** (1999), No. 5, 429–440.
7. R. HAKL, On nonnegative bounded solutions of systems of linear functional differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **19** (2000), 154–158.
8. R. HAKL, A. LOMTATIDZE, AND B. PŮŽA, On nonnegative solutions of first order scalar functional differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **23** (2001), 51–84.
9. R. HAKL, A. LOMTATIDZE, AND J. ŠREMR, Some boundary value problems for first order scalar functional differential equations. *Folia Facultatis Scientiarum Naturalium Universitatis Masarykianae Brunensis. Mathematica* 10. Masaryk University, Brno, 2002.
10. R. HAKL, A. LOMTATIDZE, AND I. P. STAVROULAKIS, On a boundary value problem for scalar linear functional differential equations. *Abstr. Appl. Anal.* **2004**, No. 1, 45–67.
11. I. T. KIGURADZE, Blow-up Kneser solutions of higher-order nonlinear differential equations. (Russian) *Differ. Uravn.* 37 (2001), No. 6, 735–743, 861; translation in *Differ. Equ.* **37** (2001), No. 6, 768–777.
12. I. T. KIGURADZE, Boundary value problems for systems of ordinary differential equations. (Russian) Translated in *J. Soviet Math.* **43** (1988), No. 2, 2259–2339. *Itogi Nauki i Tekhniki, Current problems in mathematics. Newest results, Vol. 30 (Russian)*, 3–103, 204, *Akad. Nauk SSSR, Vsesoyuz. Inst. Nauchn. i Tekhn. Inform., Moscow*, 1987.
13. I. KIGURADZE, On Kneser solutions of the Emden–Fowler differential equation with a negative exponent. *Trudy Inst. matematiky NAN Belarusi, Minsk* **4** (2000), 69–77.
14. I. T. KIGURADZE AND T. A. CHANTURIA, Asymptotic properties of solutions of nonautonomous ordinary differential equations. *Mathematics and its Applications (Soviet Series)*, 89. *Kluwer Academic Publishers Group, Dordrecht*, 1993.

15. I. KIGURADZE AND B. PŮŽA, On boundary value problems for systems of linear functional-differential equations. *Czechoslovak Math. J.* **47(122)** (1997), No. 2, 341–373.
16. I. KIGURADZE AND B. PŮŽA, On boundary value problems for functional-differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **12** (1997), 106–113.
17. I. T. KIGURADZE AND B. L. SHEKHTER, Singular boundary value problems for second-order ordinary differential equations. (Russian) Translated in *J. Soviet Math.* **43** (1988), No. 2, 2340–2417. *Itohi Nauki i Tekhniki, Current problems in mathematics. Newest results, Vol. 30 (Russian)*, 105–201, 204, *Akad. Nauk SSSR, Vsesoyuz. Inst. Nauchn. i Tekhn. Inform., Moscow*, 1987.
18. J. MAWHIN, Bounded solutions of nonlinear ordinary differential equations. *Non-linear analysis and boundary value problems for ordinary differential equations (Udine)*, 121–147, *CISM Courses and Lectures*, 371, *Springer, Vienna*, 1996.
19. Š. SCHWABIK, M. TVRDÝ, AND O. VEJVODA, Differential and integral equations: boundary value problems and adjoints. *Academia, Praha*, 1979.

(Received 30.01.2012)

Authors' addresses:

Alexander Lomtadidze

1. Institute of Mathematics, Faculty of Mechanical Engineering, Brno University of Technology, Technická 2, 616 69 Brno, Czech Republic;

2. Institute of Mathematics, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Branch in Brno, Zizkova 22, 616 62 Brno, Czech Republic.

E-mail: lomtatidze@fme.vutbr.cz

Robert Hakl

Institute of Mathematics, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Branch in Brno, Zizkova 22, 616 62 Brno, Czech Republic.

E-mail: hakl@ipm.cz

Ioannis P. Stavroulakis

Department of Mathematics, University of Ioannina 45110 Ioannina, Greece.

E-mail: ipstav@cc.uoi.gr

Short Communications

MALKHAZ ASHORDIA

ON CONDITIONS FOR THE WELL-POSEDNESS
OF NONLOCAL PROBLEMS FOR A CLASS OF SYSTEMS
OF LINEAR GENERALIZED
DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH SINGULARITIES

Dedicated to the blessed memory of Professor Levan Magnaradze

Abstract. The conditions for the so called conditionally well-posedness of a class of a linear generalized boundary value problems are given in the case when the generalized differential system has singularities.

რეზიუმე. ერთი კლასის სინგულარობებიანი განზოგადოებული დიფერენციალური სისტემებისათვის მოყვანილია ზოგადი წრფივი სასაზღვრო ამოცანის ე. წ. პირობითი კორექტულობის პირობები.

2000 Mathematics Subject Classification: 34K10.

Key words and phrases: Systems of linear generalized ordinary differential equations, the Lebesgue–Stieltjes integral, boundary value problems, singularities, conditionally well-posedness.

In the paper we give conditions for the well-posedness for the following linear system of generalized ordinary differential equations with singularities

$$\begin{aligned} dx_i(t) &= x_{i+1} da_i(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b] \ (i = 1, \dots, n-1), \\ dx_n(t) &= \sum_{i=1}^n h_i(t) x_i(t) db_i(t) + df(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \end{aligned} \tag{1}$$

with the nonlocal boundary value condition

$$\ell_i(x_1, \dots, x_n) = 0 \ (i = 1, \dots, n), \tag{2}$$

where n is a natural number, $a_i \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R})$ ($i = 1, \dots, n-1$), $f \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R})$, $b_i \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R})$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$), $h_i : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is a function measurable with respect to the measures $\mu(b_{i1})$ and $\mu(b_{i2})$, corresponding, respectively, to the nondecreasing functions $b_{i1}(t) \equiv \overset{t}{\underset{a}{\vee}}(b_i)$ and $b_{i2}(t) \equiv$

$b_i(t) - b_{i1}(t)$ for every $i \in \{1, \dots, n\}$, and $\ell_i : BV_v([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$) are linear bounded functionals.

The general differential system of the form (1) represents in a defined sense the analogy of the n th order linear ordinary differential equation of the form

$$u^{(n)} = \sum_{i=1}^n h_i(t)u^{(i-1)} + h(t) \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b]. \quad (3)$$

Note that the ordinary differential equation of the form (3) is a particular case of the system (1), where $a_i(t) \equiv t$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$), and $f(t) \equiv \int_a^t h(\tau) d\tau$.

It is well known that in the regular case, where the coefficients of the system (1) are Lebesgue–Stieltjes integrable on $[a, b]$ with respect the corresponding measures, problem (1), (2) has the Fredholm property in the defined conditions, and the unique solvability of that problem ensures its well-posedness (see [3]–[6], [13], [14], [22], [25]).

We are interested in the case, where the system (1) is singular, i.e., when some of the coefficients h_i ($i = 1, \dots, n$) are not, in general, Lebesgue–Stieltjes integrable on $[a, b]$ with respect to the corresponding measures, having singularities at some boundary or interior points of the interval $[a, b]$. Some questions dealing with the singular boundary value problems of the form (1), (2), e.g., those dealing with the Fredholm property and the solvability have been investigated in [8]–[10]. As we know, in this case, the question on the well-posedness of the generalized problem (1), (2) remains still unstudied. In the present paper, an attempt is made to fill up the existing gaps.

As for the question of the solvability and well-posedness for singular boundary value problems for ordinary differential equations, i.e., for the singular (3), (2) problem, it is investigated in [19] for the general case, and in [1], [15–17], [20], [21], [23] for some important particular cases. Note that the questions for the regular case of the ordinary differential equations are investigated sufficiently well for the linear and nonlinear cases (see, e.g., [2], [11], [12], [17], [18] and the references therein).

To a considerable extent, the interest to the theory of generalized ordinary differential equations has also been stimulated by the fact that this theory enables one to investigate ordinary differential, impulsive and difference equations from a unified point of view (see, e.g., [7], [24], [25] and the references therein).

Throughout the paper, the following notation and definitions will be used.

$\mathbb{R} =] - \infty, +\infty[$, $\mathbb{R}_+ = [0, +\infty[$; $[a, b]$ ($a, b \in \mathbb{R}$) is a closed segment.

$\mathbb{R}^{n \times m}$ is the space of all real $n \times m$ -matrices $X = (x_{ij})_{i,j=1}^{n,m}$ with the norm

$$\|X\| = \max_{j=1, \dots, m} \sum_{i=1}^n |x_{ij}|;$$

$\mathbb{R}^n = \mathbb{R}^{n \times 1}$ is the space of all real column n -vectors $x = (x_i)_{i=1}^n$.

$\overset{b}{\underset{a}{V}}(X)$ is the total variation of the matrix-function $X : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n \times m}$, i.e., the sum of total variations of the latter components x_{ij} ($i = 1, \dots, n$; $j = 1, \dots, m$); $V(X)(t) = (v(x_{ij})(t))_{i,j=1}^{n,m}$, where $v(x_{ij})(a) = 0$, $v(x_{ij})(t) = \overset{t}{\underset{a}{V}}(x_{ij})$ for $a < t \leq b$;

$X(t-)$ and $X(t+)$ are the left and the right limits of the matrix-function $X : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n \times m}$ at the point t (we will assume $X(t) = X(a)$ for $t \leq a$ and $X(t) = X(b)$ for $t \geq b$, if necessary);

$$d_1 X(t) = X(t) - X(t-), \quad d_2 X(t) = X(t+) - X(t);$$

$$\|X\|_s = \sup \{ \|X(t)\| : t \in [a, b] \}, \quad \|X\|_v = \|x(a)\| + \overset{b}{\underset{a}{V}}(X);$$

$BV([a, b], \mathbb{R}^{n \times m})$ is the set of all matrix-functions of bounded variation $X : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n \times m}$ (i.e., such that $\overset{b}{\underset{a}{V}}(X) < +\infty$);

$BV_s([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n)$ is the normed space $(BV([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n), \|\cdot\|_s)$; $BV_v([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n)$ is the Banach space $(BV([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n), \|\cdot\|_v)$.

A matrix-function is said to be continuous, nondecreasing, integrable, etc., if each of its components is such.

$s_j : BV([a, b], \mathbb{R}) \rightarrow BV([a, b], \mathbb{R})$ ($j = 0, 1, 2$) are the operators defined, respectively, by

$$s_1(x)(a) = s_2(x)(a) = 0,$$

$$s_1(x)(t) = \sum_{a < \tau \leq t} d_1 x(\tau) \quad \text{and} \quad s_2(x)(t) = \sum_{a \leq \tau < t} d_2 x(\tau) \quad \text{for } a < t \leq b,$$

and

$$s_0(x)(t) = x(t) - s_1(x)(t) - s_2(x)(t) \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b].$$

If $g : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is a nondecreasing function, $x : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ and $a \leq s < t \leq b$, then

$$\begin{aligned} & \int_s^t x(\tau) dg(\tau) = \\ & = \int_{]s, t[} x(\tau) dS_0(g)(\tau) + \sum_{s < \tau \leq t} x(\tau) d_1 g(\tau) + \sum_{s \leq \tau < t} x(\tau) d_2 g(\tau), \end{aligned}$$

where $\int_{]s, t[} x(\tau) dS_0(g)(\tau)$ is the Lebesgue–Stieltjes integral over the open interval $]s, t[$ with respect to the measure $\mu_0(s_0(g))$ corresponding to the function $s_0(g)$; if $a = b$, then we assume $\int_a^b x(t) dg(t) = 0$;

$L([a, b], \mathbb{R}; g)$ is a set of all functions $x : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ measurable and integrable with respect to the measure $\mu(g)$.

If $g(t) \equiv g_1(t) - g_2(t)$, where g_1 and g_2 are nondecreasing functions, then

$$\int_s^t x(\tau) dg(\tau) = \int_s^t x(\tau) dg_1(\tau) - \int_s^t x(\tau) dg_2(\tau) \quad \text{for } s \leq t.$$

If $G = (g_{ik})_{i,k=1}^{l,n} : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{l \times n}$ is a nondecreasing matrix-function and $D \subset \mathbb{R}^{n \times m}$, then $L([a, b], D; G)$ is the set of all matrix-functions $X = (x_{kj})_{k,j=1}^{n,m} : [a, b] \rightarrow D$ such that $x_{kj} \in L([a, b], \mathbb{R}; g_{ik})$ ($i = 1, \dots, l; k = 1, \dots, n; j = 1, \dots, m$);

$$\int_s^t dG(\tau) \cdot X(\tau) = \left(\sum_{k=1}^n \int_s^t x_{kj}(\tau) dg_{ik}(\tau) \right)_{i,j=1}^{l,m} \quad \text{for } a \leq s \leq t \leq b,$$

$$S_j(G)(t) \equiv (s_j(g_{ik})(t))_{i,k=1}^{l,n} \quad (j = 0, 1, 2).$$

If $G_j : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{l \times n}$ ($j = 1, 2$) are nondecreasing matrix-functions, $G = G_1 - G_2$ and $X : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n \times m}$, then

$$\int_s^t dG(\tau) \cdot X(\tau) = \int_s^t dG_1(\tau) \cdot X(\tau) - \int_s^t dG_2(\tau) \cdot X(\tau) \quad \text{for } s \leq t,$$

$$S_k(G) = S_k(G_1) - S_k(G_2) \quad (k = 0, 1, 2),$$

$$L([a, b], D; G) = \bigcap_{j=1}^2 L([a, b], D; G_j),$$

$$K([a, b] \times D_1, D_2; G) = \bigcap_{j=1}^2 K([a, b] \times D_1, D_2; G_j).$$

A vector-function $x = (x_i)_{i=1}^n \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n)$ is said to be a solution of the system (1) if the function $h_i x_i$ belongs to $L([a, b], b_{i1}) \cap L([a, b], b_{i2})$ and

$$x_i(t) = x_i(s) + \int_s^t x_i(\tau) da_i(\tau) \quad \text{for } a \leq s \leq t \leq b \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1),$$

$$x_n(t) = x_n(s) + \sum_{i=1}^n \int_s^t h_i(\tau) x_i(\tau) db_i(\tau) \quad \text{for } a \leq s \leq t \leq b.$$

A solution of the system (1) satisfying the boundary conditions (2) is called a solution of the problem (1),(2).

Along with the system (1), we will need to consider, respectively, the corresponding homogeneous and perturbed systems

$$dx_i(t) = x_{i+1} da_i(t) \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b] \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1),$$

$$dx_n(t) = \sum_{i=1}^n h_i(t) x_i(t) db_i(t) \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b], \quad (1_0)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} dx_i(t) &= x_{i+1} da_i(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b] \text{ (} i = 1, \dots, n-1 \text{),} \\ dx_n(t) &= \sum_{i=1}^n h_{ki}(t) x_i(t) db_i(t) + d\tilde{f}(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b], \end{aligned} \quad (4)$$

with the inhomogeneous boundary conditions

$$\ell_i(x_1, \dots, x_n) = c_i \text{ (} i = 1, \dots, n \text{),} \quad (5)$$

where $\tilde{f} \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R})$, and $c_i \in \mathbb{R}$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$).

Definition 1. The problem (1), (2) is said to be *well-posed* if for an arbitrary $\tilde{f} \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R})$ and $c_i \in \mathbb{R}$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$) the problem (4), (5) is uniquely solvable, and there exists a positive constant r independent of \tilde{f} and c such that

$$\|\tilde{x} - x\|_s \leq r \left(\sum_{i=1}^n \|c_i\| + \|\tilde{f} - f\| \right),$$

where $x = (x_i)_{i=1}^n$ and $\tilde{x} = (\tilde{x}_i)_{i=1}^n$ are, respectively, the solutions of the problems (1), (2) and (4), (5).

Definition 2. The problem (1), (2) is said to be *conditionally well-posed* if for an arbitrary $\tilde{f} \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R})$ the problem (1₀), (2) is uniquely solvable and there exists a positive constant r , independent of \tilde{f} and c , such that

$$\|\tilde{x} - x\|_s \leq r \|\tilde{f} - f\|,$$

where $x = (x_i)_{i=1}^n$ and $\tilde{x} = (\tilde{x}_i)_{i=1}^n$ are, respectively, the solutions of the problems (1), (2) and (1₀), (2).

Note that if the coefficients of the system (1₀) are integrable on $[a, b]$ with corresponding measures, then the conditional well-posedness of the problem (1), (2) implies its well-posedness. If, however,

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \int_a^b |h_i(t)| dv(b_i)(t) = +\infty,$$

then the conditional well-posedness of the problem (1), (2) does not guarantee its well-posedness.

Definition 3. Let $\ell_i : \text{BV}_v([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$) be linear bounded functionals. We say that the vector function $(\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^n$ belongs to the set $\mathcal{E}_{\ell_1, \dots, \ell_n}$ if:

- (i) for an arbitrary $i \in \{1, \dots, n\}$, the function $\varphi_i : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is continuous and $\varphi_i(t) > 0$ for $\mu(v(b_i))$ -almost all $t \in [a, b]$;
- (ii) an arbitrary vector function $(x_i)_{i=1}^n \in \text{BV}([a, b], \mathbb{R}^n)$, satisfying the boundary conditions (2), admits the estimate

$$|x_i(t)| \leq \underset{a}{\overset{t}{V}}(x_n) \cdot \varphi_i(t) \text{ for } t \in [a, b] \text{ (} i = 1, \dots, n \text{).}$$

Note that the set $\mathcal{E}_{\ell_1, \dots, \ell_n}$ is nonempty if and only if the system

$$dx_i(t) = x_{i+1} da_i(t) \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1), \quad dx_n(t) = 0 \quad \text{for } t \in [a, b]$$

under the condition (2) has only the trivial solution.

Theorem 1. *Let there exist a vector function $(\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^n$ such that*

$$(\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) \in \mathcal{E}_{\ell_1, \dots, \ell_n} \quad (6)$$

and

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \int_a^b \varphi_i(t) |h_i(t)| dv(b_i)(t) < +\infty \quad (i = 1, \dots, n).$$

Then the problem (1), (2) is conditionally well-posed if and only if the corresponding homogeneous problem (1_0) , (2) has only the trivial solution.

Theorem 2. *Let there exist a vector function $(\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^n$ such that conditions (6) and*

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \int_a^b \varphi_i(t) |h_i(t)| dv(b_i)(t) < 1 \quad (i = 1, \dots, n) \quad (7)$$

hold. Then the problem (1), (2) is conditionally well-posed.

Theorem 3. *Let there exist a vector function $(\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n) : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^n$ such that the conditions (6) and (7) hold and*

$$\int_a^b \varphi_i(t) |h_1(t)| dv(b_1)(t) = +\infty.$$

Then the problem (1), (2) is conditionally well-posed but not well-posed.

Basing on the above results, we can establish the effective conditions for the problem (1), (2) to have the *well-posed* and *conditionally well-posed* properties for some concrete type of linear bounded functionals ℓ_i ($i = 1, \dots, n$).

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

This work is supported by the Shota Rustaveli National Science Foundation (Project No. GNSF/ST09_175_3-101).

REFERENCES

1. R. P. AGARWAL AND I. KIGURADZE, On multi-point boundary value problems for linear ordinary differential equations with singularities. *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **297** (2004), No. 1, 131–151.
2. M. ASHORDIA, On the stability of solutions of linear boundary value problems for the system of ordinary differential equations. *Georgian Math. J.* **1** (1994), No. 2, 115–126.

3. M. ASHORDIA, On the correctness of linear boundary value problems for systems of generalized ordinary differential equations. *Georgian Math. J.* **1** (1994), No. 4, 343–351.
4. M. ASHORDIA, On the correctness of nonlinear boundary value problems for systems of generalized ordinary differential equations. *Georgian Math. J.* **3** (1996), No. 6, 501–524.
5. M. ASHORDIA, On the stability of solutions of the multipoint boundary value problem for the system of generalized ordinary differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **6** (1995), 1–57.
6. M. ASHORDIA, Criteria of correctness of linear boundary value problems for systems of generalized ordinary differential equations. *Czechoslovak Math. J.* **46(121)** (1996), No. 3, 385–404.
7. M. ASHORDIA, On the general and multipoint boundary value problems for linear systems of generalized ordinary differential equations, linear impulse and linear difference systems. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **36** (2005), 1–80.
8. M. T. ASHORDIA, On boundary value problems for systems of linear generalized ordinary differential equations with singularities. (Russian) *Differ. Uravn.* **42** (2006), No. 3, 291–301; English transl.: *Differ. Equ.* **42** (2006), No. 3, 307–319.
9. M. T. ASHORDIA, On some boundary value problems for linear generalized differential systems with singularities. (Russian) *Differ. Uravn.* **46** (2010), No. 2, 163–177; English transl.: *Differ. Equ.* **46** (2010), No. 2, 167–181.
10. M. ASHORDIA, On two-point singular boundary value problems for systems of linear generalized ordinary differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **56** (2012), 9–35.
11. R. CONTI, Problèmes linéaires pour les équations différentielles ordinaires. *Math. Nachr.* **23** (1961), 161–178.
12. P. HARTMAN, Ordinary differential equations. *John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York–London–Sydney*, 1964.
13. Z. HALAS, G. A. MONTEIRO, AND M. TVRDÝ, Emphatic convergence and sequential solutions of generalized linear differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **54** (2011), 27–49.
14. Z. HALAS AND M. TVRDÝ, Continuous dependence of solutions of generalized linear differential equations on a parameter. *Funct. Differ. Equ.* **16** (2009), No. 2, 299–313.
15. I. T. KIGURADZE, On a singular problem of Cauchy–Nicoletti. *Ann. Mat. Pura Appl. (4)* **104** (1975), 151–175.
16. I. T. KIGURADZE, Some singular boundary value problems for ordinary differential equations. (Russian) *Izdat. Tbilis. Univ., Tbilisi*, 1975.
17. I. KIGURADZE, The initial value problem and boundary value problems for systems of ordinary differential equations. Vol. I. Linear theory. (Russian) “*Metsniereba*”, *Tbilisi*, 1997.
18. I. T. KIGURADZE, Boundary value problems for systems of ordinary differential equations. (Russian) Translated in *J. Soviet Math.* **43** (1988), no. 2, 2259–2339. *Itogi Nauki i Tekhniki, Current problems in mathematics. Newest results*, Vol. 30 (Russian), 3–103, 204, *Akad. Nauk SSSR, Vsesoyuz. Inst. Nauchn. i Tekhn. Inform., Moscow*, 1987.
19. I. KIGURADZE AND T. KIGURADZE, Conditions for the well-posedness of nonlocal problems for higher order linear differential equations with singularities. *Georgian Math. J.* **18** (2011), No. 4, 735–760.
20. T. KIGURADZE, On some nonlocal boundary value problems for linear singular differential equations of higher order. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **47** (2009), 169–173.
21. T. I. KIGURADZE, On conditions for the well-posedness of linear singular boundary value problems. (Russian) *Differ. Uravn.* **46** (2010), No. 2, 183–190; English transl.: *Differ. Equ.* **46** (2010), No. 2, 187–194.

22. J. KURZWEIL, Generalized ordinary differential equations and continuous dependence on a parameter. (Russian) *Czechoslovak Math. J.* **7** (**82**) (1957), 418–449.
23. N. PARTSVANIA, On solvability and well-posedness of two-point weighted singular boundary value problems. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **54** (2011), 139–146.
24. Š. SCHWABIK, Generalized ordinary differential equations. *Series in Real Analysis*, 5. *World Scientific Publishing Co., Inc., River Edge, NJ*, 1992.
25. Š. SCHWABIK, M. TVRDÝ, AND O. VEJVODA, Differential and integral equations. Boundary value problems and adjoints. *D. Reidel Publishing Co., Dordrecht–Boston, Mass.–London*, 1979.

(Received 27.03.2012)

Author's addresses:

1. A. Razmadze Mathematical Institute of I. Javakhishvili Tbilisi State University, 6 Tamarashvili St., Tbilisi 0177, Georgia.
2. Sukhumi State University, 12 Politkovskaia St., Tbilisi 0186, Georgia.
E-mail: ashord@rmi.ge

IVAN KIGURADZE

ON NONLOCAL PROBLEMS WITH NONLINEAR
BOUNDARY CONDITIONS FOR SINGULAR ORDINARY
DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS

*Dedicated to the blessed memory of my dear teacher,
Professor Levan Magnaradze*

Abstract. For higher order singular ordinary differential equations, sufficient conditions for the solvability and unique solvability of nonlinear nonlocal boundary value problems are established.

რეზიუმე. მაღალი რიგის სინგულარული ჩვეულებრივი დიფერენციალური განტოლებებისათვის დადგენილია არაწრფივ არალოკალურ სასაზღვრო ამოცანათა ამოხსნადობისა და ცალსახად ამოხსნადობის საკმარისი პირობები.

2010 Mathematics Subject Classification. 34B10, 34B16.

Key words and phrases. Differential equation, higher order, singular, boundary value problem, nonlocal, nonlinear.

Let $n \geq 2$ be an arbitrary natural number, $-\infty < a < b < \infty$, and let $f :]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ be a measurable in the first and continuous in the last n arguments function. The differential equation

$$u^{(n)} = f(t, u, \dots, u^{(n-1)}) \quad (1)$$

is said to be singular if the function f with respect to the first argument is nonintegrable on $[a, b]$, having singularities at one or at several points of that segment. For the singular equation (1), the two-point boundary value problems and the multi-point problems of Valée-Poisson and Cauchy–Nicoletti type are thoroughly investigated (see [2]–[7], [11], [12], [20], [21] and the references therein).

As for the problems with nonlocal conditions, i.e., with the conditions connecting the values of an unknown solution and those of their derivatives at different points of the segment $[a, b]$, they are well-studied for the second order equations (see, e.g., [9], [10], [13], [14], [16]–[19]). Some nonlocal problems are studied for higher order linear singular differential equations as well (see [1], [15]). However, nonlocal problems with nonlinear boundary conditions both for linear and nonlinear singular differential equations

remain still little studied. The present paper is devoted to the study of one of such problems. More precisely, for the equation (1) we consider the boundary value problem

$$u^{(i-1)}(a) = 0 \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1), \quad \varphi(u) = 0, \quad (2)$$

where φ is some, generally speaking, nonlinear functional, defined in the space of $(n-1)$ -times continuously differentiable functions, satisfying the initial conditions

$$u^{(i-1)}(a) = 0 \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1). \quad (2_0)$$

Throughout the paper, the use will be made of the following notation.

$\mathbb{R} =] - \infty, +\infty[$, $\mathbb{R}_+ = [0, +\infty[$.

\mathbb{R}^n is the n -dimensional real Euclidean space,

$$D = \left\{ (x_1, \dots, x_n) \in \mathbb{R}^n : x_k x_1 > 0 \quad (k = 1, \dots, n) \right\}.$$

L is the space of Lebesgue integrable on $[a, b]$ real functions.

C_0^{n-1} is the Banach space of $(n-1)$ -times continuously differentiable functions $u : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$, satisfying the initial conditions (2₀), with the norm

$$\|u\|_{C_0^{n-1}} = \max \left\{ |u^{(n-1)}(t)| : a \leq t \leq b \right\}.$$

$$M_0^{n-1} = \left\{ u \in C_0^{n-1} : u^{(n-1)}(t) \neq 0 \text{ for } a \leq t \leq b \right\}.$$

\tilde{C}^{n-1} is the space of $(n-1)$ -times continuously differentiable functions $u : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ with an absolutely continuous $(n-1)$ -th derivative.

Everywhere in the sequel, it is assumed that $\varphi : C_0^{n-1} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is a continuous functional, bounded on every bounded set of the space C_0^{n-1} .

Along with (1), (2), we consider the boundary value problem

$$u^{(n)} = (1 - \lambda) \sum_{k=1}^n p_k(t) u^{(k-1)} + \lambda f(t, u, \dots, u^{(n-1)}), \quad (3)$$

$$u^{(i-1)}(a) = 0 \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1), \quad (1 - \lambda)u^{(n-1)}(a) + \lambda\varphi(u) = 0, \quad (4)$$

and the initial problem

$$u^{(n)}(t) \geq - \sum_{k=1}^n g_k(t) u^{(k-1)}(t), \quad (5)$$

$$u^{(i-1)}(a) = 0 \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1), \quad u^{(n-1)}(a) = 1, \quad (6)$$

where λ is a parameter, and $p_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) and $g_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions such that

$$\int_a^b (t-a)^{n-k} |p_k(t)| dt < +\infty \quad (k = 1, \dots, n), \quad (7)$$

$$\int_a^b (t-a)^{n-k} g_k(t) dt < +\infty \quad (k = 1, \dots, n). \quad (8)$$

A function $u \in \widetilde{C}^{n-1}$ is said to be a **solution of the differential equation (3) (of the differential inequality (5))** if it almost everywhere on $]a, b[$ satisfies that equation (that inequality). If, moreover, this function satisfies the boundary conditions (4) (the initial conditions (6)), then it is called a **solution of the problem (3), (4) (of the problem (5), (6))**.

Theorem 1 (The Principle of a Priori Boundedness). *Let for every $\rho \in \mathbb{R}_+$ the function*

$$f_\rho(t) = \max \left\{ |f(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)| : |x_k| \leq \rho(t-a)^{n-k} \quad (k = 1, \dots, n) \right\}$$

be integrable on $[a, b]$. Let, moreover, there exist measurable functions $p_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$), satisfying the conditions (7), and a positive number ρ_0 such that for any $\lambda \in]0, 1[$ an arbitrary solution of the problem (3), (4) admits the estimate

$$\|u\|_{C_0^{n-1}} \leq \rho_0.$$

Then the problem (1), (2) has at least one solution.

This theorem is proved on the basis of Theorem 1 appearing in [8].

Relying on the above-formulated theorem, we prove theorems below which contain effective sufficient conditions for the solvability of the problem (1), (2).

Introduce the following definition.

Definition. We say that the vector function (g_1, \dots, g_n) with the measurable components $g_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) belongs to the set V if the conditions (8) hold and an arbitrary solution of the problem (5), (6) satisfies the inequality

$$u^{(n-1)}(t) > 0 \quad \text{for } a \leq t \leq b.$$

Theorem 2. *Let on the set $]a, b[\times D$ the inequality*

$$f(t, x_1, \dots, x_n) \operatorname{sgn}(x_1) \geq - \sum_{k=1}^n g_k(t) |x_k| - h(t) \quad (9)$$

be fulfilled, and let on the set $]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n$ the inequality

$$|f(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)| \leq \sum_{k=1}^n h_k(t) |x_k| + h(t) \quad (10)$$

hold, where

$$(g_1, \dots, g_n) \in V, \quad (11)$$

$h \in L$ and $h_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions such that

$$\int_a^b (t-a)^{n-k} h_k(t) dt < +\infty \quad (k = 1, \dots, n). \quad (12)$$

If, moreover,

$$\varphi(u)u^{(n-1)}(a) > 0 \quad \text{for } u \in M_0^{n-1}, \quad (13)$$

then the problem (1), (2) has at least one solution.

Corollary 1. Let on the sets $]a, b[\times D$ and $]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n$ be satisfied respectively the inequalities (9) and (10), where $h \in L$ and $g_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ and $h_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions. Let, moreover,

$$\sum_{k=1}^n \frac{1}{(n-k)!} \int_a^b (t-a)^{n-k} g_k(t) dt \leq 1 \quad (14)$$

and the conditions (12) and (13) hold. Then the problem (1), (2) has at least one solution.

Corollary 2. Let on the set $]a, b[\times D$ the inequality

$$f(t, x_1, \dots, x_n) \operatorname{sgn}(x_1) \geq - \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \frac{\ell_k |x_k|}{(t-a)^{n-k-1}} - \ell |x_n| - h(t)$$

be fulfilled and on the set $]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n$ the inequality (10) hold, where $h \in L$, $\ell_1, \dots, \ell_{n-1}, \ell$ are nonnegative numbers such that

$$\int_0^{+\infty} \frac{ds}{\ell_0 + \ell s + s^2} > b-a, \quad \ell_0 = \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \frac{\ell_k}{(n-k-1)!}, \quad (15)$$

and $h_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions satisfying the conditions (12). If, moreover, the functional φ satisfies the condition (13), then the problem (1), (2) has at least one solution.

As an example, we consider the boundary value problem

$$u^{(n)} = \sum_{k=1}^n p_k(t, u, \dots, u^{(n-1)}) u^{(k-1)} + p_0(t, u, \dots, u^{(n-1)}), \quad (16)$$

$$u^{(i-1)}(a) = 0 \quad (i = 1, \dots, n-1),$$

$$\sum_{k=1}^n \left(\int_a^b (s-a)^{-\alpha_k} u^{(k-1)}(s) d\beta_k(s) \right)^{m_k} = 0. \quad (17)$$

Here, $p_k :]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ ($k = 0, \dots, n$) are functions, measurable in the first and continuous in the last n arguments,

$$\alpha_k \in [0, n - k] \quad (k = 1, \dots, n), \text{ every } m_k \text{ is an odd number;} \quad (18)$$

$$\beta_k : [a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R} \quad (k = 1, \dots, n) \text{ are nondecreasing functions,} \quad (19)$$

and

$$\lim_{s \rightarrow a} \sum_{k=1}^n (\beta_k(b) - \beta_k(s)) > 0. \quad (20)$$

Moreover, by the values of the functions $s \rightarrow (s - a)^{-\alpha_k} u^{(k-1)}(s)$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) at the point a are meant their limits as $s \rightarrow a$.

From Corollaries 1 and 2 it follows

Corollary 3. *Let the conditions (18)–(20) be fulfilled and the functions p_k ($k = 0, \dots, n$) on the set $]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n$ satisfy the inequalities*

$$\begin{aligned} -g_k(t) &\leq p_k(t, x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq h_k(t) \quad (k = 1, \dots, n), \\ |p_0(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)| &\leq h(t), \end{aligned}$$

where g_k and $h_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions and $h \in L$. Let, moreover, the functions h_k ($k = 1, \dots, n$) satisfy the conditions (12), and as for the functions g_k ($k = 1, \dots, n$), they either satisfy the condition (14), or

$$g_k(t) \equiv \ell_k(t - a)^{k+1-n} \quad (k = 1, \dots, n-1), \quad g_n(t) \equiv \ell, \quad (21)$$

where $\ell_1, \dots, \ell_{n-1}, \ell$ are nonnegative numbers, satisfying the inequality (15). Then the problem (16), (17) has at least one solution.

Theorem 3 below and its corollaries deal with the case, where the function f for an arbitrary $t \in]a, b[$ in the last n arguments has continuous in \mathbb{R}^n partial derivatives $\frac{\partial f_k(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)}{\partial x_k}$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$).

Theorem 3. *Let on the set $]a, b[\times \mathbb{R}^n$ the inequalities*

$$-g_k(t) \leq \frac{\partial f(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)}{\partial x_k} \leq h_k(t) \quad (k = 1, \dots, n) \quad (22)$$

be fulfilled, where g_k and $h_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions, satisfying the conditions (11) and (12). If, moreover,

$$\int_a^b |f(t, 0, \dots, 0)| dt < +\infty, \quad (23)$$

$$\varphi(0) = 0 \text{ and } (\varphi(u+v) - \varphi(u))v^{(n-1)}(a) > 0 \text{ for } u \in C_0^{n-1}, v \in M_0^{n-1}, \quad (24)$$

then the problem (1), (2) has one and only one solution.

Corollary 4. *Let the conditions (22)–(24) be fulfilled, where g_k and $h_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}_+$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) are measurable functions. Let, moreover, the functions h_k ($k = 1, \dots, n$) satisfy the conditions (12), and the functions g_k*

($k = 1, \dots, n$) either satisfy the inequality (14), or admit the representations (21), where $\ell_1, \dots, \ell_{n-1}, \ell$ are nonnegative numbers satisfying the condition (15). Then the problem (1), (2) has one and only one solution.

Finally, as an example, we consider the linear differential equation

$$u^{(n)} = \sum_{k=1}^n p_k(t)u^{(k-1)} + p_0(t) \quad (25)$$

with the nonlinear boundary conditions (17), where $p_k :]a, b[\rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ ($k = 0, \dots, n$) are measurable functions such that

$$\int_a^b (t-a)^{n-k} |p_k(t)| dt < +\infty \quad (k = 1, \dots, n), \quad \int_a^b |p_0(t)| dt < +\infty. \quad (26)$$

From Corollary 4, for the problem (25), (17) we have

Corollary 5. *Let the conditions (18)–(20) and (26) be fulfilled. Let, moreover, either*

$$\sum_{k=1}^n \frac{1}{(n-k)!} \int_a^b (t-a)^{n-k} (|p_k(t)| - p_k(t)) dt \leq 2,$$

or there exist nonnegative constants $\ell_1, \dots, \ell_{n-1}, \ell$, satisfying the condition (15), such that on $]a, b[$ the inequalities

$$p_k(t) \geq -\ell_k(t-a)^{k+1-n} \quad (k = 1, \dots, n-1), \quad p_n(t) \geq -\ell$$

are fulfilled. Then the problem (25), (17) has one and only one solution.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

This work is supported by the Shota Rustaveli National Science Foundation (Project # FR/317/5-101/12).

REFERENCES

1. R. P. AGARWAL AND I. KIGURADZE, On multi-point boundary value problems for linear ordinary differential equations with singularities. *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **297** (2004), 131–151.
2. R. P. AGARWAL AND I. KIGURADZE, Two-point boundary value problems for higher-order linear differential equations with strong singularities. *Bound. Value Probl.* **2006**, Art. ID 83910, 32 pp.
3. R. P. AGARWAL AND D. O'REGAN, Singular differential and integral equations with applications. *Kluwer Academic Publishers, Dordrecht*, 2003.
4. I. T. KIGURADZE, Some singular boundary value problems for ordinary differential equations. (Russian) *Tbilisi University Press, Tbilisi*, 1975.
5. I. T. KIGURADZE, On a singular problem of Cauchy–Nicoletti. *Ann. Mat. Pura Appl. (4)* **104** (1975), 151–175.
6. I. T. KIGURADZE, On the modified problem of Cauchy–Nicoletti. *Ann. Mat. Pura Appl. (4)* **104** (1975), 177–186.

7. I. T. KIGURADZE, On the solvability of the Vallee-Poussin problem. (Russian) *Differentsial'nye Uravneniya* **21** (1985), No. 3, 391–398; English transl.: *Differ. Equations* **21** (1985), 249–255.
8. I. KIGURADZE, On solvability conditions for nonlinear operator equations. *Mathematical and Computer Modelling* **48** (2008), No. 11-12, 1914–1924.
9. I. T. KIGURADZE AND A. G. LOMTATIDZE, On certain boundary-value problems for second-order linear ordinary differential equations with singularities. *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **101** (1984), No. 2, 325–347.
10. I. KIGURADZE, A. LOMTATIDZE, AND N. PARTSVANIA, Some multi-point boundary value problems for second order singular differential equations. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **56** (2012), 133–141.
11. I. KIGURADZE, B. PŮŽA, AND I. P. STAVROULAKIS, On singular boundary value problems for functional differential equations of higher order. *Georgian Math. J.* **8** (2001), No. 4, 791–814.
12. I. KIGURADZE AND G. TSKHOVREBADZE, On the two-point boundary value problems for systems of higher order ordinary differential equations with singularities. *Georgian Math. J.* **1** (1994), No. 1, 31–45.
13. I. KIGURADZE AND T. KIGURADZE, Optimal conditions of solvability of nonlocal problems for second-order ordinary differential equations. *Nonlinear Anal.* **74** (2011), No. 3, 757–767.
14. I. T. KIGURADZE AND T. I. KIGURADZE, Conditions for the well-posedness of nonlocal problems for second-order linear differential equations. (Russian) *Differents. Uravneniya* **47** (2011), No. 10, 1400–1411; English transl.: *Differ. Equations* **47** (2011), No. 10, 1414–1425.
15. T. I. KIGURADZE, On conditions for the well-posedness of linear singular boundary value problems. (Russian) *Differ. Uravn.* **46** (2010), No. 2, 183–190; English transl.: *Differ. Equ.* **46** (2010), No. 2, 187–194.
16. A. G. LOMTATIDZE, A boundary value problem for second-order nonlinear ordinary differential equations with singularities. (Russian) *Differents. Uravneniya* **22** (1986), No. 3, 416–426; English transl.: *Differ. Equations* **22** (1986), 301–310.
17. A. G. LOMTATIDZE, A nonlocal boundary value problem for second-order linear ordinary differential equations. (Russian) *Differents. Uravneniya* **31** (1995), No. 3, 446–455; English transl.: *Differ. Equations* **31** (1995), No. 3, 411–420.
18. A. LOMTATIDZE, On a nonlocal boundary value problem for second order linear ordinary differential equations. *J. Math. Anal. Appl.* **193** (1995), No. 3, 889–908.
19. A. LOMTATIDZE AND L. MALAGUTI, On a nonlocal boundary value problem for second order nonlinear singular differential equations. *Georgian Math. J.* **7** (2000), No. 1, 133–154.
20. I. RACHŮNKOVÁ, S. STANĚK, AND M. TVRDÝ, Singularities and Laplacians in boundary value problems for nonlinear ordinary differential equations. *Handbook of differential equations: ordinary differential equations. Vol. III*, 607–722, *Handb. Differ. Equ., Elsevier/North-Holland, Amsterdam*, 2006.
21. I. RACHŮNKOVÁ, S. STANĚK, AND M. TVRDÝ, Solvability of nonlinear singular problems for ordinary differential equations. *Contemporary Mathematics and Its Applications*, 5. *Hindawi Publishing Corporation, New York*, 2008.

(Received 31.05.2013)

Author's address:

A. Razmadze Mathematical Institute of I. Javakhishvili Tbilisi State University, 2 University St., Tbilisi 0186, Georgia.

E-mail: kig@rmi.ge

NINO PARTSVANIA

ON A NONLOCAL BOUNDARY VALUE PROBLEM FOR
TWO-DIMENSIONAL NONLINEAR SINGULAR
DIFFERENTIAL SYSTEMS

Dedicated to the blessed memory of Professor Levan Magnaradze

Abstract. For two-dimensional nonlinear differential systems with strong singularities with respect to a time variable, unimprovable sufficient conditions for solvability and well-posedness of the Nicoletti type nonlocal boundary value problem are established.

რეზიუმე. ორგანზომილებიანი არაწრფივი დიფერენციალური სისტემებისათვის ძლიერი სინგულარობებით დროითი ცვლადის მიმართ დადგენილია ნიკოლეტის ტიპის არალოკალური სასაზღვრო ამოცანის ამოხსნადლობისა და კორექტულობის არაგაუმჯობესებადი საკმარისი პირობები.

2010 Mathematics Subject Classification: 34B10, 34B16.

Key words and phrases: Two-dimensional differential system, nonlinear, nonlocal boundary value problem, strong singularity, well-posedness.

Let $-\infty < a < b < +\infty$, $C(]a, b[)$ be the space of continuous functions $u :]a, b[\rightarrow R$ with finite right and left limits $u(a+)$ and $u(b-)$ at the points a and b and with the norm $\|u\|_C = \sup \{|u(t)| : a < t < b\}$, and let $L^2(]a, b[)$ be the space of square integrable functions $u :]a, b[\rightarrow R$ with the norm

$$\|u\|_{L^2} = \left(\int_a^b u^2(t) dt \right)^{1/2}.$$

By $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$ we denote the space of vector functions $(u_1, u_2) :]a, b[\rightarrow R^2$ with continuously differentiable components u_1 and u_2 , satisfying the conditions

$$u_1(a+) = 0, \quad \int_a^b (u_1'^2(t) + u_2^2(t)) dt < +\infty.$$

We consider the nonlinear differential system

$$\frac{du_1}{dt} = f_1(t, u_2), \quad \frac{du_2}{dt} = f_2(t, u_1) \tag{1}$$

with the Nicoletti type nonlocal boundary conditions

$$u_1(a+) = 0, \quad u_2(b-) = \varphi(u_1, u_2). \tag{2}$$

Here $f_1 :]a, b[\times R \rightarrow R$ and $f_2 :]a, b[\times R \rightarrow R$ are continuous functions, and $\varphi : C(]a, b[) \times L^2(]a, b[) \rightarrow R$ is a continuous functional.

A vector function $(u_1, u_2) :]a, b[\rightarrow R^2$ is said to be a solution of the problem (1), (2) if:

(i) u_1 and u_2 are continuously differentiable and satisfy the system (1) at every point of the interval $]a, b[$;

(ii) $u_1 \in C(]a, b[)$, $u_2 \in L^2(]a, b[)$, and the equalities (2) are satisfied.

In the present paper, unimprovable in a certain sense conditions are established guaranteeing, respectively, the solvability of (1), (2) in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$ and the stability of its solution with respect to small perturbations of right-hand sides of (1) and the functional φ . In contrast to the results from [2]–[6], concerning the solvability and well-posedness of the Nicoletti type problems, the theorems below cover the case, where the system (1) with respect to a time variable has a strong singularity at the point a in the Agarwal–Kiguradze sense [1], i.e., the case, where

$$\int_a^b (t-a) \left(|f_2(t, x)| - f_2(t, x) \operatorname{sgn}(x) \right) dt = +\infty \quad \text{for } x \neq 0.$$

Along with the problem (1), (2) we consider the auxiliary problem

$$\frac{du_1}{dt} = \lambda f_1(t, u_2), \quad \frac{du_2}{dt} = \lambda \delta(t) f_2(t, u_1), \quad (3)$$

$$u_1(a+) = 0, \quad u_2(b-) = \lambda \varphi(u_1, u_2), \quad (4)$$

dependent on a parameter $\lambda \in [0, 1]$ and an arbitrary continuous function $\delta : [a, b] \rightarrow [0, 1]$.

Theorem 1 (A principle of a priori boundedness). *Let there exist a nonnegative function $g \in L^2(]a, b[)$ and a positive constant ρ such that*

$$|f_1(t, x)| \leq g(t)(1 + |x|) \quad \text{for } a < t < b, \quad x \in R,$$

and for any number $\lambda \in [0, 1]$ and an arbitrary continuous function $\delta : [a, b] \rightarrow [0, 1]$ every solution (u_1, u_2) of the problem (3), (4) admits the estimate

$$\|u_1'\|_{L^2} + \|u_2\|_{L^2} < \rho.$$

Then the problem (1), (2) has at least one solution in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$.

Consider now the case, where

$$\begin{aligned} & \varphi(u_1, u_2) \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(b-)) \leq \\ & \leq \alpha_0 + \alpha_1 \|u_1'\|_{L^2} + \alpha_2 \|u_2\|_{L^2} \quad \text{for } (u_1, u_2) \in C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2), \end{aligned} \quad (5)$$

and in the domain $]a, b[\times R$ the inequalities

$$\ell_0 |x| \leq [f_1(t, x) - f_1(t, 0)] \operatorname{sgn}(x) \leq \ell_1 |x|, \quad (6)$$

$$[f_2(t, x) - f_2(t, 0)] \operatorname{sgn}(x) \geq -\frac{\ell}{(t-a)^2} |x| \quad (7)$$

are fulfilled.

On the basis of Theorem 1, the following theorem can be proved.

Theorem 2. *Let*

$$\int_a^b f_1^2(t, 0) dt < +\infty, \quad \int_a^b (t-a)^{1/2} |f_2(t, 0)| dt < +\infty, \quad (8)$$

and let the conditions (5)–(7) hold, where $\alpha_i \geq 0$ ($i = 0, 1, 2$), $\ell_k > 0$ ($k = 0, 1$), and $\ell \geq 0$ are constants such that

$$(b-a)^{1/2} (\alpha_1 \ell_1 + \alpha_2) \ell_1 + 4\ell_1^2 \ell < \ell_0. \quad (9)$$

Then the problem (1), (2) has at least one solution in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$.

Particular case of the boundary conditions (2) are the multi-point boundary conditions

$$u_1(a+) = 0, \quad u_2(b-) = \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \beta_k u_1(t_k) + \beta_n u_1(b-) + \beta_0, \quad (10)$$

where $\beta_k \in R$ ($k = 0, \dots, n$).

Suppose

$$[\beta_n]_+ = \frac{1}{2} (|\beta_n| + \beta_n).$$

From Theorem 2 it follows

Corollary 1. *Let the conditions (6)–(8) be satisfied, where $\ell_k > 0$ ($k = 0, 1$) and $\ell \geq 0$ are constants such that*

$$\frac{2}{\pi} (b-a)^{1/2} \left(\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} |\beta_k| (t_k - a)^{1/2} + [\beta_n]_+ (b-a)^{1/2} \right) \ell_1^2 + 4\ell_1^2 \ell < \ell_0. \quad (11)$$

Then the problem (1), (10) has at least one solution in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$.

Now we consider the perturbed problem

$$\frac{dv_1}{dt} = f_1(t, v_2) + q_1(t), \quad \frac{dv_2}{dt} = f_2(t, v_1) + q_2(t), \quad (12)$$

$$v_1(a+) = 0, \quad v_2(b-) = \varphi(v_1, v_2) + \alpha, \quad (13)$$

and we introduce the following

Definition. The problem (1), (2) is said to be **well-posed** in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$ if it has a unique solution (u_1, u_2) in that space and there exists a positive constant r such that for any continuous functions $q_i :]a, b[\rightarrow R$ ($i = 1, 2$), satisfying the condition

$$\nu(q_1, q_2) = \left(\int_a^b q_1^2(t) dt \right)^{1/2} + \int_a^b (t-a)^{1/2} |q_2(t)| dt < +\infty,$$

and for any real number α , the problem (12), (13) has at least one solution $(v_1, v_2) \in C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$, and every such solution admits the estimate

$$\|v_1' - u_1'\|_{L^2} + \|v_2 - u_2\|_{L^2} \leq r(\nu(q_1, q_2) + |\alpha|).$$

Theorem 3. *Let*

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi(u_1, u_2) \operatorname{sgn}(u_1(b-)) &\leq \\ &\leq \alpha_1 \|u_1'\|_{L^2} + \alpha_2 \|u_2\|_{L^2} \quad \text{for } (u_1, u_2) \in C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2), \end{aligned}$$

and let in the domain $]a, b[\times R$ the conditions

$$\ell_0 |x| \leq f_1(t, x) \operatorname{sgn}(x) \leq \ell_1 |x|, \quad (14)$$

$$f_2(t, x) \operatorname{sgn}(x) \geq -\frac{\ell}{(t-a)^2} |x| \quad (15)$$

be fulfilled, where $\alpha_i \geq 0$ ($i = 1, 2$), $\ell_k > 0$ ($k = 0, 1$), and $\ell \geq 0$ are constants, satisfying the inequality (9). Then the problem (1), (2) is well-posed in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$.

In the case, where the boundary conditions (2) have the form

$$u_1(a+) = 0, \quad u_2(b-) = \sum_{k=1}^{n-1} \beta_k u_1(t_k) + \beta_n u_1(b-), \quad (16)$$

Theorem 3 yields

Corollary 2. *Let in the domain $]a, b[\times R$ the conditions (14) and (15) be satisfied, where $\ell_k > 0$ ($k = 0, 1$) and $\ell \geq 0$ are constants, satisfying the inequality (11). Then the problem (1), (16) is well-posed in the space $C_0^{1,2}(]a, b[; R^2)$.*

As an example, we consider the differential system

$$\frac{du_1}{dt} = p_1(t, u_2)u_2, \quad \frac{du_2}{dt} = \frac{p_2(t, u_1)}{(t-a)^2} u_1, \quad (17)$$

where $p_1 :]a, b[\times R \rightarrow R$ and $p_2 :]a, b[\times R \rightarrow R$ are continuous functions. For this system from Corollary 2 it follows

Corollary 3. *Let in the domain $]a, b[\times R$ the conditions*

$$\ell_0 \leq p_1(t, x) \leq \ell_1, \quad p_2(t, x) \geq -\ell$$

be satisfied, where $\ell_i > 0$ ($i = 0, 1$) and $\ell \geq 0$ are constants, satisfying the inequality (11). Then the problem (17), (16) is well-posed.

Remark 1. If the conditions of Corollary 3 are satisfied and in the domain $]a, b[\times R$ the inequality

$$p_2(t, x) \leq -\bar{\ell}$$

holds, where $\bar{\ell}$ is a positive constant, then the system (17) with respect to a time variable has a strong singularity at the point a in the Agarwal–Kiguradze sense.

Remark 2. The condition (9) in Theorems 2 and 3 is unimprovable and it cannot be replaced by the condition

$$(b-a)^{1/2}(\alpha_1 \ell_1 + \alpha_2) \ell_1 + 4\ell_1^2 \ell \leq \ell_0.$$

Also, the strict inequality (11) in Corollaries 1–3 cannot be replaced by the non-strict one

$$\frac{2}{\pi} (b-a)^{1/2} \left(\sum_{k=1}^{n-1} |\beta_k| (t_k - a)^{1/2} + [\beta_n]_+ (b-a)^{1/2} \right) \ell_1^2 + 4\ell_1^2 \ell \leq \ell_0.$$

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT

This work is supported by the Shota Rustaveli National Science Foundation (Project # GNSF/ST09_175_3-101).

REFERENCES

1. R. P. AGARWAL AND I. KIGURADZE, Two-point boundary value problems for higher-order linear differential equations with strong singularities. *Boundary Value Problems*, 2006, 1–32; Article ID 83910.
2. I. T. KIGURADZE, Some singular boundary value problems for ordinary differential equations. (Russian) *Tbilisi University Press, Tbilisi*, 1975.
3. I. T. KIGURADZE, On a singular problem of Cauchy–Nicoletti. *Ann. Mat. Pura Appl.* **104** (1975), 151–175.
4. I. T. KIGURADZE, Boundary value problems for systems of ordinary differential equations. (Russian) *Itoqi Nauki Tekh., Ser. Sovrem. Probl. Mat., Novejshie Dostizh.* **30** (1987), 3–103; English transl.: *J. Sov. Math.* **43** (1988), No. 2, 2259–2339.
5. I. KIGURADZE, Optimal conditions of solvability and unsolvability of nonlocal problems for essentially nonlinear differential systems. *Comm. Math. Anal.* **8** (2010), No. 3, 92–01.
6. A. LASOTA AND C. OLECH, An optimal solution of Nicoletti’s boundary value problem. *Ann. Polon. Math.* **18** (1966), 131–139.
7. N. PARTSVANIA, On two-point boundary value problems for two-dimensional linear differential systems with singular coefficients. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **51** (2010), 155–162.
8. N. PARTSVANIA, On two-point boundary value problems for two-dimensional nonlinear differential systems with strong singularities. *Mem. Differential Equations Math. Phys.* **58** (2013), 147–152.

(Received 25.12.2012)

Author’s addresses:

1. A. Razmadze Mathematical Institute of I. Javakishvili Tbilisi State University, 6 Tamarashvili St., Tbilisi 0177, Georgia;

2. International Black Sea University, 2 David Agmashenebeli Alley 13km, Tbilisi 0131, Georgia.

E-mail: ninopa@rmi.ge

Robert Hakl, Alexander Lomtadze, Ioannis P. Stavroulakis
Bounded Solutions to the First Order Scalar Functional
Differential Equations 1

Short Communications

Malkhaz Ashordia. On Conditions for the Well-Posedness
of Nonlocal Problems for a Class of Systems
of Linear Generalized Differential Equations
with Singularities 105

Ivan Kiguradze. On Nonlocal Problems with Nonlinear
Boundary Conditions for Singular Ordinary
Differential Equations 113

Nino Partsvania. On a Nonlocal Boundary Value Problem
for Two-Dimensional Nonlinear Singular
Differential Systems 121

**მეშუარები დიფერენციალურ განტოლებებსა და მათემატიკურ
ფიზიკაში 59 (2013)**

შ ი ნ ა ა რ ს ი

რობერტ ჰაკლი, აღუქსანდრე ლომთათიძე,

იოანის პ. სტაეროლაკისი

პირველი რიგის სკალარული ფუნქციონალურ დიფერენციალური
განტოლებების შემოსაზღვრული ამონახსნები 1

მოკლე წერილები

მალხაზ აშორდია. სინგულარობებიან წრფივ განზოგადოებულ
დიფერენციალურ განტოლებათა ერთი კლასისათვის
არალოკალურ ამოცანათა კორექტულობის
პირობების შესახებ 105

ივანე კილურაძე. არაწრფივ სასაზღვრო პირობებიანი
არალოკალური ამოცანების შესახებ სინგულარული
ჩვეულებრივი დიფერენციალური განტოლებებისათვის 113

ნინო ფარცვანია. ერთი არალოკალური სასაზღვრო ამოცანის
შესახებ ორგანზომილებიანი არაწრფივი სინგულარული
დიფერენციალური სისტემებისათვის 121